

Hiccup and Toothless

by skyressshun

Category: How to Train Your Dragon

Genre: Romance

Language: English

Characters: Astrid, Hiccup

Status: Completed

Published: 2012-04-24 19:22:45

Updated: 2016-01-10 00:34:41

Packaged: 2016-04-26 12:37:02

Rating: K+

Chapters: 61

Words: 113,542

Publisher: www.fanfiction.net

Summary: Modern how to train your dragon gender swap Hiccup is bullied at school but when she and a certain someone meet a night fury in the woods their lives will change forever

1. Chapter 1

My name is Sarah Haddock but everyone calls me hiccup why well because when I was younger I used to have hiccupping fits whenever Arden Hofferson talked to me luckily he considers me an absolute loser now so I don't have to worry about that anymore. I live in a small village called Berk, never heard of it I'm not surprised it's very small no more than 100 people live here. I'm 11 years old and I'm about to start secondary school, you're probably thinking that's great a chance to reinvent yourself well I'm here to tell you otherwise because I'm probably the most hated person in the entire village which if you think about it is very impressive because just about everyone in this village is bitter and cruel so being the most hated out of all them is pretty impressive. My father, Stoic, is the mayor of Berk and to be quite honest I have no idea what that entails so don't bother asking. Me and my father don't have a great relationship he got extremely over protective after my mother died 2 years ago she was in a car crash and her spinal cord was severed she was in hospital for 3 days before she died in her sleep, after her funeral dad tried to convince me to leave normal school and go into private tutoring at home but I wasn't going to let him even though I got bullied (he doesn't know that) I still had some friends they were teachers but still friends I wasn't about to lose the only friends I'd ever had because he has issues I wasn't even sure if I could call them friends since the only time I ever really spoke to them was on the trial day when they decide if they want you or not.

When my dad woke me for school I had this horrid feeling and seriously reconsidered his offer to leave school but I couldn't go back on my decision or I would never hear the end of it so reluctantly I dragged myself out of bed "you can still leave school

you don't have to do this" my father whispered to me as I sat on the edge of my bed rubbing the sleep out of my eyes "well thank you for the encouraging words dad" his face turned cold and he dropped my uniform on my lap "get dressed" with that he turned and left allowing me to get changed. I examined my uniform and safe to say I was not impressed it was a white polo shirt and a plain black jumper which my father had got 2 sizes too big I could just hear what his reason would be "you'll grow into it" he classed that as an explanation I classed it as him being cheap, you wouldn't think a mayor would be cheap but trust me when I say he is 1 of the cheapest people in the village.

After I was dressed in my deeply unimpressive uniform I decided to examine it in my full length mirror to see just how awful it actually was and just as I predicted I looked horrid in it. I looked anorexic. I walked into the kitchen and saw my father standing over the sink I stepped to the side so I could see his face he had a scowl embedded into his features he always got this way. "Calm down nothings gonna happen it's just school" I tried to reassure him the way a mother reassures a toddler on their first day of school "I know I just worry ever since your mother-" I cut him off I didn't need to be reminded of her on my first day "I know I really do but nothing will happen I promise" I really hope I can keep that promise but you never know what will happen on your first day "I have to go now I'll see you tonight" I waved by to him as I walked out the door and made my way to what was probably my decent into hell.

2. Chapter 2

It wasn't till I reached the door that I realised I was starving I was so caught up in not being late on my first day that I completely forgot about breakfast not that it really mattered I could just get something at break, right, at that thought I searched through my pockets to see what money I had only to find that my father had given me nothing, thanks dad very thoughtful of you, oh well only 6 hours right I can survive that, easy. I didn't have enough time to contemplate that thought because the reminder I had set on my phone last night went off telling me I only had 5 minutes to get inside find the office and get my schedule, sounds easy right well it isn't seeing as this is my first time going in the school and actually paying attention to where I was going on the trial day I got lost, embarrassing, its even worse when you find out its only 3 floors.

After an excruciating 10 minutes I finally found the office it was in the far end off the second floor which made the fact that I couldn't find it sting a little less. I took in a deep breath and prepared myself for whatever horror I had convinced myself was on the other side of that door, when I pushed down the handle a feeble click sounded that seemed deafening to me seeing as how scared I made myself. "hello" an old woman greeted me sitting behind a desk opposite the door I smiled at her feeling all that fear evaporate from my body "hi, I'm a little late and was wondering if I could get my schedule?" I walked over to her and smiled trying to seem confident even if I didn't feel it she seemed to buy my confidence act because she asked me my name and printed out my schedule. I thanked her and walked to my form, as soon as I reached the door the bell rang signalling that first lesson was about to start. I stepped to the side of the door allowing everyone to pass me once everyone

had left I walked into the room to introduce myself to my teacher. As I walked through the door a young woman probably in her early 20s faced me she had a fair face and a small smile that balanced her out perfectly looked at me for a few seconds her smile never wavering after a few more seconds I realised that she was waiting for me to answer her "ohâ€¦ uhh." I didn't know what to say I thought quickly and said the first thing that came to my mind that seemed like it was relevant but honestly I was so nervous anything sounded good to me "I'm Sarah and I'm in your form and I â€¦ ummâ€¦ just wanted to introduce myself" I gave her a smile and she replied with an even bigger one "ok Sarah, I'm miss Jensenâ€¦ and uhh would you like me to get you your schedule?" she was nervous to that was good it meant she was new too wait did she say she would get my schedule perfect I just wasted 10 minutes.

After me and miss Jensen talked she wrote me a note for English and sent me on my way. On my way to English I found my mind wondering to what I would do after school I knew that I was going into the woods that surrounded the village but the question was where. I had explored just about every inch of that place (dad doesn't know that either). As I reached my English door (I only wasted 2-3 minutes thanks to the directions from miss Jensen) I decided to explore the cove that was in the heart of the woods. The trees there were very dense and barely anyone ever went there it would be the perfect place to draw and scavenge for interesting treasure that I could use for my inventions "why are you late?" my thoughts were interrupted by a males voice. I glanced up and saw a tall thin man with brown short hair in a white shirt and jacket. He had a stern look on his face that clearly showed that he was displeased with my tardiness. I put on a confident face and walked over to him handing him the note. He took 1 glance at it and told me to sit on the 3rd row second from the right. I used his directions and found who he wanted me to sit next to Arden Hofferson! Oh my god why do you hate me? Sitting me next to my crush that's mean, even for you! I went over to him and felt my face heat up I was sure I was blushing. He scooted his chair further away from me and it felt like my heart broke a little bit. He really hated me that much that he would do something that immature as to move his chair 3 inches away from me. I sighed as I dropped down onto the chair. Ordinarily I would be thrilled to sit next to someone but him what would I do? Its not like I can talk to him! I don't know if I got over that hiccupping thing and if I haven't then I'm just going to humiliate myself more in front of him than I already have in the past.

Our teacher reintroduced himself and what we were doing. Since I had missed it the first time his name was Mr Smith and he told us that we were doing stories involving mythical creatures. I have to admit now I like him a lot more than when I first met him seeing as we were doing something I actually knew about. After he finished the introduction he started explaining what we were doing this lesson. I was paying close attention to what he was saying wanting to make my work the best it could be. I felt like I had to prove myself, that he had already formed an opinion of me and that I had to prove him wrong. "hey hiccup" I felt someone nudge my side and turned my head to face him. I raised my eyebrow quizzically "can I have a pen?" I sighed opened my bag and handed him a pink pencil with a small pink fluffy character glued to the top. I wanted to embarrass him a little bit so I gave him the girliest pencil I had "uhh thanks" he took the pencil off me and placed it on the table. Mr Smith had finished explaining and I had an idea of what I wanted to do. He had written

on his white board that we could choose between a dragon, a minotaur or a unicorn. Most of the girls in the class smiled when they read unicorn and whispered to their friends about what they were going to have it do. I however smiled when I saw dragon, I was obsessed with them and had read every single book on them in our local library. Arden saw my smile and asked "what kind of unicorn story are you doing?" oh god I'm gonna have another hiccupping fit I just know it, I tried to pretend that I was just talking to my dad but that only made it worse "I'm not doing a unicorn story I'm doing dragons" I told him just after my chest jerked as I held in a hiccup. He seemed surprised he probably thought that I was some girly girl that loved shopping and makeup and stalked boys (he was kinda right with the last one) "I'm impressed you're not like the other girls you're different aren't you?" I didn't know what to say did he want me to say I was or wasn't? I decided to take a chance "I'm not, what are you doing?" I asked trying to divert the conversation away from me as I felt my chest jerk again "dragons too. I'm addicted to them. I've always wished I lived in a place of dragons, I could hunt them, kill them or train them. That's what I'm gonna do my story about training dragon. I'm gonna use a gronckle as a captured dragon that is tortured and maybe-" I let him ramble on about his story it was nice to have him talk to me for once without it being an insult. He talked for a very long time he told me his entire plot and how he was going to include himself in the story making him the hero and his dragon was going to be a monstrous nightmare "Arden that's really great but we have 15 minutes left and I really need to start my story" I cut him off just as he was telling me about how the dragons killed each other over who was his favourite. He was going into very gory detail and I felt queasy "what? oh yeah sorry got a bit carried away. Its so rare that I meet someone who likes dragons and will listen to me ramble on about them" Arden apologised to me but he really didn't have to, I didn't mind listening to him talk I honestly did enjoy him talking to me "its ok, I just want to do a bit of my story" I glanced at his paper and saw nothing but his name "you should probably do a bit too" I saw embarrassment flash across his face but it was quickly gone as he nodded and turned to his paper he started writing soon after and I saw that he was setting it in Berk.

****please r&r i want to know what you think****

3. Chapter 3

After the final bell rang I decided that I didn't want to walk home and walked over to the bus section of the car park I went to the first bus and saw Gobber sitting there with the same smile plastered on his face like always (Gobber used to drive me to my primary but after I left so did he) if you didn't know him you would think he would be depressed. He had an accident a few years ago and lost his right hand and left leg. Gobber was quite poor and couldn't afford to have real prosthetics attached so he had made his own. His leg was a stump like the kind you would expect a pirate to have and his hand was interchangeable. "afternoon Gobber do you think you could give me a lift home I'm too tired to walk?" I asked him walking up the steps and to his little cab. I already knew the answer but it was polite to ask "course now go to your seat I kept it free just incase" Gobber smirked at me as I headed off to my seat, I had a single seat behind his cab we christened it mine after about a year.

I was the last one Gobber dropped off and as he was about to drive

off I stopped him when saw my dads car parked in front of the house. I knew that if Gobber weren't here then my dad would be constantly with me and I wouldn't get a chance to go exploring "Gobber, my dads home want to come in and talk with him? I know you two haven't had a chance to speak in a while" I knew that Gobber wouldn't be able to refuse my offer seeing as he and my dad were best friends and had been since they were 7. "are you kiddin' me? course I want to come in" Gobber couldn't have ran out of the bus quicker. He ran out so quick that he actually forgot to turn it off. Luckily it was a usual occurrence and I knew how to park and turn it off. I walked into my house and silently headed upstairs to grab my sketch book. On my way back down the stairs my dad spotted me and ushered me into the kitchen the exact opposite way I wanted to go "where are you going young lady?" I hate it when he says that "I'm going to the library to do my home work, I'll talk to you later after Gobber's gone home cos I know that you wont be listening you never listen when he's here" he stared at me and Gobber started laughing it was rare that Stoic didn't know what to say. I turned from them and walked out of the house and started towards the woods it would take about 5 minutes to get to the woods and another 10 to get into the dense part.

Whilst I was making my way thought the thick trees I collided with a solid object and dropped to the ground with a thud. I shook my head and looked up to see what I had walked into and what I saw couldn't have been more of a shock "_Arden!_" he grinned at me "hiccup what you doing here" "I could ask you the same thing" I retorted "exploring" he told me casually "same" I answered his earlier question standing up and dusting off the dirt from my trousers "where are you going?" he asked "deep in the woods where the cove is" his smiled and was about to ask why but he spoke before I could "me too" he must have seen my questioning expression because he answered me before I could ask "I was wandering around there yesterday and I heard this huge crash and a cloud of dust came up I tried to see what it was but the tree branches made it impossible for me. So I went home to get a penknife but as I was going back out my mum came home and I had to stay in. The only reason I'm here now is because she's working a double shift" he acted out the entire scene he was describing, it was amusing and I had to stifle a laugh from all his facial expressions "mind if I go with you?" I asked feeling my face heat slightly he nodded and started walking off. After he took about 15 steps I followed him keeping what I assumed to be a safe distance I didn't want anyone who may have been walking here to see us together they might get the wrong idea I didn't mind that but I was sure he would.

We were battling against the thick overgrowth of branches for a long time. When we finally made it through the sun had started setting it would only be in the sky for maybe 15-20 minutes more. "well that was a lot of work lets hope it wasn't for nothing." Arden joked sliding down a little slope to get to an entrance someone had carved into the wall of the cove. It almost looked like he had been here before "you coming?" his voice snapped me out of my thoughts and I slid down being careful not to embarrass myself in front of him. He clasped his hands together "lets go I've been waiting all day for this" he took off into the opening and I had to run to keep up with him. He had stopped at the edge of an over hang and was staring at something shock and panic engraved on his face. I stepped up next to him and looked at him questioningly, he outstretched his hand pointing to something on the opposite side of the cove. I followed his gaze and saw a black reptile like creature with wings, bound in ropes with

weights attached to the ends. There was blood splattered behind it and the only word I could vocalise was _"Dragon!"_

****hope you like please review****

4. Chapter 4

Oh my god I'm gonna pass out. I stared at Arden he stared at me and I knew that I was asking the question we were both thinking "you see that right?" he nodded slowly he was still in shock and so was I. "can we run?" I asked he shook his head "no, I've wanted to see one of those all my life and I'm not going to run now. I'm going to get up close and personal with it I'm going to see what it really looks like" Arden grabbed the side of the overhang and dropped down sliding down on the rough rocky wall. He stood up once he reached the bottom and headed over to the bound creature. As much as I hate to admit it I was also curious about the creature and I couldn't just stand there and watch I had to see as well. I slid down after him and ran to catch up. He had stopped in front of the beast and was staring at it in awe "its incredible isn't it?" Arden stared at me as I approached him "yea it really is I never thought they actually existed" he nodded his head showing he thought the same thing "is it just me or does it look scared" I asked Arden looked at me then back at the dragon he nodded his head again and took out his penknife the dragons eyes widened and it turned its head away from us he must think that Arden was going to kill him but I knew he wouldn't he said that he always wanted to see one and you wouldn't kill what you always wanted, would you? He knelt down beside it and grabbed a rope he stuck his knife behind the rope and pulled snapping it and loosening it from the dragons feet he then grabbed another doing the same thing he continued doing this till the ropes were loose enough for it to get away. Once enough ropes were cut the dragon sprang off the floor landing on me and Arden he pinned us to the ground and took in a deep breath. This is how I'm going to die being burnt to a crisp next to the guy I have an insane crush on. The dragons head snapped back to us and I shut my eyes as tight as I could preparing for the inevitable to happen. The dragons feet lifted from us and it let out an ear piecing scream I brought me hands up trying to block out as much of the noise as I could and opened my eyes a fraction just in time to see it take off leaving us laying on the ground feeling very confused "well that's gratitude for you" I joked trying to get a response from him he smirked and I felt my face heat up. He seemed to miss the slight tinge of pink on my face since all he did was push himself up and help me "you ok?" I nodded and turned trying to find somewhere to get out before that dragon came back and decided to finish us off. I spotted a small hole near to where the dragon had run off to there was a rock near the hole that I feared the dragon may be hiding behind but it was our only way out seeing as we couldn't climb out. I motioned for him to follow me and headed of towards the hole "where are you going" he whispered after me I had no idea why he was whispering maybe he was afraid the dragon would hear. I didn't answer his question and continued walking. Reluctantly he followed after me not wanting to be left alone he grabbed my arm once he caught up with me and it looked as if he was going to hiss something at me but once he herd a growl come from nowhere he stopped himself and ran out of the cove dragging me along with him.

We were running for a good 5 minutes straight through the path we had cut for ourselves "can we please stop I'm gonna faint." I panted out

struggling to keep up with him I was never any good at sports. He stopped though he didn't look very pleased with it "take a few minutes then we keep running I'm not gonna let either of us become dragon food" his tone was aggravated but I had to stop my lungs were bursting. I took in some deep breaths and nodded signalling that we could continue he didn't hesitate and resumed with the dragging. Once he felt we were far enough away from the dragon he stopped and I collapsed onto the ground personally I felt like we could have stopped a while ago but to him obviously my opinion meant nothing "you ok?" he asked he seemed genuinely concerned that I had collapsed "yea if you don't count the fact that I'm in agony from the worlds worst stitch" I replied sarcastically of course I'm not ok. He slumped down next to me and I felt a blush cover my cheeks, I mentally cursed myself for being so stupid, "well looks like were gonna have to chose something else for English." Arden joked he was trying to lighted the mood. I smiled at him and stared at my hands I still felt very uncomfortable around him he seemed to pick up on it and moved closer to me, seems like dragons make people change there opinions, it seems like he thinks I'm still worried the dragon will attack again "lets go home I'll walk you." he offered standing I nodded standing next to him and brushing the dirt off my uniform, looks like I'm going to have to wash it tonight, we started walking to my house and I was slightly nervous incase my dad saw me with him although we don't have the best relationship he was still overprotective and I didn't want him having a go at him for no reason.

Thankfully Gobber was still there so my dad was to preoccupied to notice 2 voices at the door instead of silence. "welcome back Sarah how was the library did you complete your homework?" dad asked glancing away from Gobber for a split second. My mind went blank I had completely forgotten that was what I told him so I just nodded, I seem to be doing a lot of that today my heads starting to get tired, he gave me a small smile and submerged himself back in his conversation with Gobber. As soon as there conversation restarted I headed upstairs pulling my sketch pad out off the inside pocket of my jumper it was slightly bent from the dragon standing on it but it was still intact, I ran to the small desk I had in my room flipping to a new page and started to sketch the dragon while the image was still fresh in my head. After I finished the sketch I closed my book and placed it in between as pile of my study books, I knew dad wouldn't look at it but I was a paranoid person, standing I walked to my bed and set my alarm I looked at the time it was only quarter to 5 and I knew I would be up all night but I was so drained of energy all I could think about was sleep.

5. Chapter 5

Arden's POV

I thought I would pass out when I got home lucky for me I managed to stay conscious which gave me the chance to sort through my thoughts they were all so muddled up from the amount of fear that I had endured that I couldn't be sure of any specifics the only thing I was sure about was that I felt a strong protectiveness over Sarah, did I just call her Sarah that's weird I never call her by her real name, like I wanted to get her away even if I couldn't. Shaking my head I trudged upstairs laying on my bed and involuntarily thinking about Sarah, I thought about how shy and how modest she was like she had

known idea how beautiful she was I pictured her in my head every small detail from her freckles and shoulder length brown hair to the slight tinge of pink that coated her cheeks every time I looked at her, I fell asleep thinking about her and had one of the best sleeps I had had in a long time.

I was woken up shortly after 7 by my mum "hi mum" I groaned "why were you asleep?" my mum asked simply "busy day" I answered "fine. But come down and get something to eat" I pushed myself up and followed my mum down stairs. She had ordered a pizza like she always did when she worked a double shift that was one of the reasons why I loved her working late the main one was that I could do whatever I wanted but the pizza was a close second. I dropped onto one of the dinner chairs grabbing a piece of pizza before I was even on the chair it was pepperoni my favourite. "so what happened to make today so busy?" mum asked cocking her eyebrow "nothing that important just a lot." I answered gazing at my pizza avoiding the question as best I could my mum was relentless when it comes to difficult questions she was very persistent, I looked up and immediately recognised the look in her eyes she thought it was a girl she was going to ask the worst question imaginable for an 11 year old before I could stop her she asked "who's the girl?" now most people wouldn't find this the worst question but trust me with my mum it was she couldn't keep a secret to save her life, so yet again I tried to avoid the question "I don't know what you're talking about." mum stared at me a questioning look crossed her face than it looked like a light had gone off "it wouldn't happen to be this hiccup girl now would it?" I involuntarily blushed and I honestly have no idea why. My mum smirked victoriously an 'I knew it' look plastered all over her face "no it's not her." I answered my voice wavering a bit "oh really then why are you blushing?" I opened my mouth to respond but nothing came out. I grabbed my plate and walked upstairs. Before I closed my door I yelled back to her "I'm not blushing!" I heard her laughing and slammed my door.

Hiccups POV

When I woke up it was only 11 o'clock and instead of going back to sleep I decided to find out what kind of dragon me and Arden saw I pulled my laptop out from under my bed (my dad hated me going on things when he couldn't watch over my shoulder kind of makes you wonder why he bought it for me in the first place) once I logged on I went onto Google and typed in dragons a page came up straight away and said 'Dragon classifications' I clicked on it and some links came up 'strike class' 'fear class' 'mystery class' at the bottom of the page it said 'all' I clicked on that and the first dragon came up its name was 'thunder drum'. A picture came up of it as well it had a short body with 4 wings 2 big main wings on its body and 2 smaller ones on the base of its tail. It also had spikes running down its tail all the way to the tip. The dragon had a huge mouth that seemed to be never ending from the picture you couldn't tell where the head ends and the body begins. A little caption was placed underneath it read 'this reclusive dragon inhabits sea caves and dark tide pools. When startled the thunder drum produces a concussive sound that can kill a man at close range, extremely dangerous kill on sight.' "Not our dragon onto the next one" I mumbled clicking the next page. 'Timber jack' a picture came up again and the dragon looked huge its wings were spread out and at the edge of each what I presumed to be bones running through the wings were spikes. Its head was held high with pointed horns sticking out of the sides but they pointing back

to make it more streamline, the dragons tail had spikes on them like the last one and there was another caption below 'this gigantic creature has razor sharp wings that can slice through full grown trees, extremely dangerous kill on sight.' "I wonder if 'extremely dangerous kill on sight' will become a bit of a theme." The next few pages weren't much help either after the timber jack there was the scaldren which sprayed scalding water at its victims and again was extremely dangerous kill on sight after that there was the changeling which sprayed acid and was kill on sight. After that I flicked through the pages quicker wanting to find our dragon and not learn about them. Even though I flicked through the pages the names still caught my attention 'gronckle' 'jippleback' the scrill' 'bone napper' 'whispering death' I ignored the names and looked at the info after that (kind of wished I hadn't though) 'burns its victims' 'buries its victims' 'chokes its victims' 'turns its victims inside out' "err." 'extremely dangerous' 'extremely dangerous' 'kill on sight' 'kill on sight' 'kill on sight'. I finally got to the last page there was no picture and the name said "night fury. Speed: unknown. Size: unknown the unholy offspring of lightning and death itself. Never engage this dragon. Your only chance hide and prey it does not find you" I think I found our dragon. I printed this page to our downstairs printer knowing that I had to show Arden tomorrow. I crept downstairs hoping my dad would be asleep he had an early meeting tomorrow and I didn't think he would stay up too late. I was right he was asleep and he left me something to eat (nice of him I'm surprised he even noticed I was here he's usually oblivious when Gobber's here). I put the food in the microwave and went to the printer to retrieve the page. "This really needs a picture or a description to be sure it's our dragon." I thought aloud. The microwave beeped and I got my dinner/supper and went back upstairs to eat so I could do some more research.

It was 12:30 and I was still doing research so far all I found was a short description that some Vikings gave and all that said was 'the beast had cat like eyes that could pierce your soul and a screech that split the air' that was it an hour and a half of research at that was it. "I'm looking at this last one then I'm going back to bed." I sighed getting a little agitated with my lack of success. The last one was from a Viking that lived here on Berk there wasn't a name apparently when the village found out what this boy had done they banished him from the village and his father disowned him the entire article was 'his eyes are green and his body is a slick black his wings are wide but thin when he's mad his teeth are out his eyes go into slits and he hisses but when he's content he retracts his teeth his eyes become orbs and he purrs, when you go near him with a weapon he becomes hostile and will attack you' that was all he said and it says at the bottom that he was forced to make his statement by the threat of killing the dragon "bit harsh if you ask me but at least I know the dragon we saw was a night fury." I quickly scribbled down the statement the boy gave on the back of the sheet folded it and put it under my bed with my laptop. "If I can get just a couple more hours sleep I'll be happy" I mumbled settling back down in my bed pulling my covers to the bottom of my chin.

please review I want to know what was good and what was bad so please review

When my alarm went off I was grateful that I remembered to set it if I hadn't my dad would have woke me and would have seen my laptop (I hadn't pushed it under my bed enough and it was sticking out a lot) I took the sheet off the top and laid it on my bed while I got dressed. Before I ran downstairs I pushed my laptop under my bed fully once I did that I ran downstairs holding the folded sheet "morning dad" I greeted him "you're happy today" he commented "yea I had a good day yesterday and I'm looking forwards to my lessons today." (I had 3 lessons with Arden today, I'd checked his planner while we were in English) I grabbed my bag and placed my folded sheet in with my schedule. "Dad have you seen my PE kit?" I asked before I sat opposite him placing my bag next to me. He shook his head "no why'd you need it?" I sighed really he couldn't tell from 'PE' "I have PE today." I told him my tone clearly showing that I was irritated. "Try the dryer I might have put it in there last night." I sighed yet again and went to check the dryer and sure enough they were there. Stuffing my kit in my bag being careful not to crumple my schedule and dragon sheet not after all the trouble I went through last night finding that info. After I did that I went next to my dad and took his drink and had a big gulp from it. He always had coffee in the morning and after my late night hunting on the internet I really needed it. "I got to go. Bye" I waved to him before darting from the house.

I made it to school a few minutes early and ran to my form room. I may have made a bad first impression but I was determined to make a better second one. I saw Miss Jensen standing in the front and talking to some kid she seemed to be quite mad and I had no idea why she was mad but whoever had annoyed her seemed to be handling it well. She had short brown hair that ended just after her ears, was chubby and when she turned I saw she had a stub nose. When I saw her nose and round face I recognised her as Sally Lout she had bullied me in primary for years and was the first to call me Hiccup. Sally loved making me miserable I think it was her favourite thing about school seeing as she rarely went a day without making me cry (I never cried around her I would run away and cry somewhere private.) I don't remember seeing her yesterday which was another reason (apart from spending 1-1 time with Arden) why yesterday was the best day of school ever. I took a deep breath and pushed the door open Sally turned fully and saw me standing by the door. She sent me a glare which was normal for her and turned her attention back to Miss Jensen "look I'm sorry alright can we just forget this and I promise I won't do it again." Sally faked an apology bowing her head slightly to make it seem like she was sincere Miss Jensen smiled slightly and nodded. Sally walked away from her and started making her way to her chair she sent glare after glare towards me that made me wonder what I had done to upset her so much. "Morning Miss." I greeted her walking to the empty front desk that connected onto her desk placing my bag on the desk I sat down "good morning Sarah." We talked for the remainder of form and when the bell rang I checked my schedule and I had English first again.

When I got to English I found Arden was already there and was talking to Sally. I wasn't surprised by this because Sally had a huge crush on Arden almost as big as mine and was always hanging onto him rarely leaving him alone that's another reason why I loved yesterday. As I got closer to them I heard what they were talking about or to be more specific what she was taking to him about "so I moved into my parents basement and we have this gym down there you could come by some time to work out" you look like you work out." She rambled on slipping

in small compliments at the end. Arden's eyes drifted from hers to mine as I approached them. When Sally noticed he wasn't listening to her anymore she turned around to yell at whoever had caused this when she saw I was standing behind her she scowled "what do you want freak can't you see we're talking here get lost." She told me. Any other day I would have but she was in my seat so she was the one who should 'get lost'. "I can't you're in my seat." I pointed out trying not to seem intimidated "do I look like I care go sit on your own like a good little freak and leave me and Arden alone can't you see that he would much rather sit and talk to me than with the-". She started having a go at me but before she could finish Arden stopped her by saying "Sally go sit with Jess let Sa- Hiccup sit down." Sally stared at him bewildered but stood and walked over to Jess (better known as Ruffnut) "thanks" I mumbled before I sat next to him "I should be thanking you I was about to go insane she would not stop talking I couldn't get a word in." he complained I nodded in understanding and reached into my bag that was next to me so I could retrieve my research on the dragon. "I found this last night about that dragon." I told him after I found my paper I laid it in front of him and told him to read. I followed his eyes as he read and he seemed to understand what I was showing him he turned the paper over and read the paragraph the boy gave about this dragon. "This sounds like our dragon and I bet you're thinking it's this night fury aren't you" I nodded at him "I know it is. This boy knew something about this dragon and it even says his dad disowned him and that he was forced to make his statement. He knew something." I explained pointing to the main parts of the paragraph to emphasise my point "I know. So what do you want to do cos I want to go see that night fury again?" "I do too so do you want to go after school or later?" I asked taking the paper from him and placing it back in my bag "how about lunch we can get back here before the end of school so we won't miss the bus." He offered I didn't know what to say I knew it was wrong to skip school but I was skipping it with him so I answered using logic "yea leaving at lunch sounds good as long as we're back before the day ends. I don't catch the bus that often but I do need to be home on time." He nodded and was about to continue talking when our teacher and a man in a suit came in the classroom. We all stopped talking and looked forwards "class this is Mr Dawson he is here to find out what's been happening with all the animals and people that have gone missing." "Hello everyone I'm sure you're all eager to discover what's been going on so if you know anything me and my team would really appreciate the help" he monotone "also if any of you have any questions on what's happened we will tell you all we know" he continued talking and most people asked questions but we didn't, we already had an idea of what was happening and didn't want to hear their perception.

I couldn't focus on the rest of my lessons until lunch. I was feeling guilty about skipping I had never skipped a day in my life and I didn't know what to do or to say to my dad if he found out. I was getting changed after PE (we had done running and rather predictably I came last) when I heard Sally talking to Ruffnut "Hiccup didn't do anything she walked that track I swear I'm gonna give her something to cry to her daddy about later." Sally ranted "I know and I saw her kick you away from Arden earlier in English I mean who the hell does she think she is? She doesn't stand a chance with him but you, you two are meant to be." Ruffnut ranted back. I stayed hidden in the changing cubical till the bell for lunch rang but even then I stayed in there till everyone had left. When I finally did leave I found Arden was waiting for me "took you long enough." He commented as we

walked over to the door that lead out to the field which we would have to cross in order to get into the woods. "Yea, sorry I was getting changed took longer than I expected I had to be careful that I didn't drop my paper on the floor you never know it could be useful later." I explained he seemed to buy my excuse and we continued walking. As we walked across the field I was so paranoid that someone would see me that I was constantly looking over my shoulder I saw Sally on the field with Ruffnut and her brother Tuffnut (nicknames were popular in our school Sally had one but only used it when she was around her friends. Her nickname was Snotlout nobody knows how she got it but if you called her by it and weren't her friend you would most likely end up in a cast) I was sure they spotted me with Arden and almost turned back and ran inside but was stopped by Arden taking my hand and pulling me through the gate that blocked our school from the woods. "Not going to bail out on me are you?" I could feel myself blush and quickly shuck my head he smiled and started leading me through the woods.

7. Chapter 7

****sorry it took so long to post hopefully a longer chapter makes up for it.****

We had been walking for 5 minutes and I knew there was no going back now. I had skipped school with my crush and right now I didn't care what my dad thought I only cared about being with Arden. I heard some rustling behind me and stopped. Arden appeared to have not heard it and continued walking jolting me and pulling his arm back he turned to see what was wrong

"I heard something" I muttered weakly.

He sighed and asked where. I pointed in the direction of the sound and we walked over to it there was a large group of people there and they had baskets of fish with them. I whispered to Arden "what do you think they're doing cos it looks like they're searching for something?"

He looked at all of them and answered "you think they're looking for that thing that's been taking people?" I thought about it and it seemed plausible

"Yea probably but why have fish? If it's some kind of mountain cat like they said wouldn't they have brought raw meat?" he nodded his head

"Maybe they're looking for the dragon" I was sceptical why would they be looking for the dragon but I decided to humour him

"Ok say they're looking for the dragon why use fish?" he thought for a moment before he answered

"Perhaps dragons eat fish which is why no one before us and possibly them knew they existed because they were always at sea instead of on land." that actually made sense I nodded

"If dragons really do eat fish do you think we should take some to ours you know try and make friends" I asked slightly fearful that he would laugh but he took my answer very seriously and crept forwards

to the nearest basket and grabbed 2 fish then ran silently back to me. He handed one to me and started pulling me towards the dense part of the woods

"Come on we have to hurry" he whispered after he looked at his watch and dragging me faster.

I was getting more and more nervous the closer to the cove we got. I started panicking that people at school would notice we weren't there and I was also panicking that the dragon would have the fish as an appetiser and us as the main course.

"Hiccup we're here, snap out of your little daydream." Arden whispered jerking my arm

"I wasn't day dreaming I was just so consumed with panicking that I wasn't talking." I whispered back fearful that the dragon would hear us. We didn't know how good its hearing was and I didn't want to tempt it by being too loud. "Come on" I pulled him this time being as quiet as humanly possible. We crept into the cove through the small hole we'd escaped through yesterday. As we took a couple of steps further into the cove I felt a shiver run through my spine and had the oddest feeling that we were being watched. I froze when I heard a low growl coming from nowhere. I turned my head and saw that Arden had heard it as well. I squeezed his hand tighter finding some sense of security in his tightly clenched fingers.

When I turned my head to look forwards again I saw a black shape jump out from behind the rock that stood close to the hole in the cove wall. I couldn't help the gasp that escaped from my lips and I felt Arden tense when the dragon leapt in front of us. It appeared to be sniffing like it could smell something so I tugged Arden forwards indicating that I wanted him to show the dragon the fish. Hesitantly he held the fish out the dragon crept forwards obviously wary of us. He opened his mouth and I could have sworn that I didn't see any teeth. He was about to take the fish from Arden's hand when he stopped and backed off preparing to attack. Arden quickly brought his hand back and snatched his other from my grip. He put his hand in his pocket and pulled out a red penknife still shut but as soon as the dragon saw it he backed off and growled. He dropped the penknife on the floor trying to show the dragon that he wasn't a threat. Not convinced the dragon motioned with its head towards the lake only a few feet away from us. Arden picked the knife up with the top of his foot and tossed it into the lake causing a slight splash. This had a drastic impact on the dragon who immediately dropped his defensive stance and sat down like a dog. Being extremely cautiously Arden extended his hands showing the dragon the fish that was now lying across them.

The dragon started creeping forwards again opening its mouth wide. Arden noticed what I had earlier and questioned

"Toothless? I could have sworn you had-" before he could finish his sentence the dragons teeth shot out snatching the fish from his hands. He barely had enough time to retract his hands a second later he would have become the new Gobber "-teeth" he finished. The dragon threw its head back and swallowed the fish in two. Once he finished he stared at us and I threw my fish towards him not wanting the dragon to snatch it from me along with my hands (I had awful reflexes) again the dragon swallowed it in two. Once it finished it

looked at both of us and started advancing on us. We in turn started moving back.

"Ah. No, no, no, no. we don't have anymore" as we continued moving back we fell over. Seeing as we couldn't see behind us, even though we were on the ground, we didn't stop moving back that is until we hit a large rock. Arden started panicking while I pushed myself as close to the rock as I could bringing my knees towards my chest before the dragons face was in ours. He squinted his eyes and I heard a strange noise almost like he was going to be sick. His stomach started moving he opened his mouth and two tail ends of a fish came out landing in our laps

"eww" I muttered feeling the spit on the fish tail dampen my trousers. The dragon pushed himself up and sat on his hind legs staring at us intensely. I felt really awkward being there under his intense gaze. I shifted nervously and glanced over at Arden being sure not to turn my head too much. I saw that he was as nervous as I was. I looked back at the dragon; he tilted his head towards the fish tail and up to our faces. I followed his eyes and understood what he wanted us to do sighing I nudged Arden's side so he looked at me. I picked up the fish and raised it up to my face. He copied and I brought it to my mouth opening it and taking a huge bite out of the fish scales and all. He looked at me in horror as I looked back at the dragon and smiled

"mmm" I told him. Once Arden recovered from his shock he copied me taking a bite from his fish admittedly a smaller one but still a bite. He shivered from the horrid taste of raw spit covered fish but nodded his head at the dragon faking that he liked it. The dragon swallowed implying that he wanted to finish it my shoulders sagged as I sighed again. Swallowing the fish I gagged and was almost sick I covered my mouth and forced the fish down. Once it had settled and I was sure I wasn't going to be sick I glared at Arden who still had the fish in his mouth. He swallowed his fish and gagged like I had.

We both turned back to the dragon, who licked his lips. Arden gave him a quick smile while I gave him a toothy smile; the dragon squinted his eyes and started opening his mouth at the sides revealing his gums. He continued doing whatever he was doing and after a few seconds of concentration he finished and I realised he was smiling a very gummy smile. My smile dropped and I couldn't help but reach out and try and touch him. The dragon quickly realised what I was doing and his teeth shot out. He growled and took off to the other side of the lake.

"Nice going" Arden commented dryly

"Shut up. Don't tell me that you've never wanted to touch him" I retorted standing up brushing the spit and scales that had come off the fish onto the floor

"Ok so maybe I have but I'm not stupid enough to actually do it." He retorted back. Ignoring him I started walking over to the other side of the lake "where are you going?" he asked running over to me. I stopped and looked at him.

"I'm going over to that dragon and I'm not leaving till I can touch him" I stated and continued over to the other side of the lake. While

I was walking over I saw the dragon burning a patch in the ground, he patted down the burnt grass and curled up on it. He looked up at a tree close to him and saw a bird in its nest fly off. He watched the bird and I saw jealousy in his eyes. When he took his gaze off the small bird his eyes landed on me. While he was distracted I had sat down near him, he looked annoyed and covered his face with his half tail. I inched my way towards him using my hands to move myself so I made as little noise as possible. Apparently what little sound I had made was enough to let him know what I was up to. He lifted his tail and glared at me. As soon as he raised his tail I turned on my heels and quickly walked away with that fake casual walk people have when they are nervous.

The dragon stood up even after I had walked back and went over to the tree that bird had flown from. He scrambled up it using his claws to try and make footholds. Once he had reached a thick branch that looked like it could hold his weight he dangled himself from his tail covering himself with his wings. He looked rather unsurprisingly like a bat. I looked over at Arden who was giving me thumbs up

"Smooth I'm sure you're close to touching him." His voice was coated with sarcasm

"If you're not going to help then you can either shut up or go home, either way I'm not bothered." I shouted back to him being careful not to yell too loudly I didn't want to become this thing's new chew toy. I saw Arden pout and sit back down resting his back against the rock we had been cowering against not 5 minutes ago.

I thought for about 3-4 minutes before I figured out what I wanted to do. I searched the ground and found a long straight stick with a flat end "this will work perfectly" I whispered to myself walking over to a small rock. I sat down and started dragging the stick through the earth. I could feel eyes on me while I was drawing and I didn't know if it was Arden or the dragon. I hoped it was the dragon or my plan would never work. I heard a sound which reminded me of my nan's cat I resisted the urge to turn and kept my eyes locked on my drawing. I could see the dragon's silhouette cover my drawing in shadows thanks to the setting sun but I refused to let my eyes drift from my picture. I finished the drawing by dotting his eyes. I gazed at my drawing with pride; I think I got him right.

I heard footsteps trail away from me they paused for a second and then I heard a cracking sound. I turned and saw the dragon pulling the tree branch he had been resting on across the ground creating a pattern. I looked over at Arden and saw how surprised he was that the dragon had copied me. I took my eyes from him and looked back to the dragon. I saw him spin around and he smacked me on the head with the leaves on the tree branch. He dragged the branch in front of me, stopped turned to me then dotted the ground before setting off again dragging and curving round the earth. When he stopped a second time he dropped the branch next to him making sure to miss his lines he nodded his head in approval. I stood and stared at what he had done in awe I started walking forwards still looking around when I heard a growl I flinched and froze turning to face the dragon I saw him staring at my feet I followed his gaze and saw I was standing on one of his lines I lifted my foot and he started purring

"Interesting, wonder if it'll work a second time?" I muttered to myself lowering my foot so the toes of my shoe touched his line. Sure

enough he growled again I repeated it a couple more times enjoying the contrast in his personality, "Ok enough of that one more time and I think he'll kill me" I shook my head and stepped into a small misshapen circle between 2 lines. His purring grew louder and he looked surprised. I continued stepping through the lines carefully avoiding them. I stopped when I felt an intense gaze on me I cautiously turned around and saw the dragon staring at me. I was about to step away but my foot hovered over a line if I stood on one this close to him I was dead for sure so instead I placed my foot back with my other one. I was that close to him that a thought crossed my mind that if I reached out and touched him I'd have at least a second before he ripped me to pieces. I hesitantly reached out my hand going towards his snout. He growled causing me to flinch and pull my hand back. I closed my eyes intimidated by his intense stare and turned my head away from him. Maybe if I reached out to him with my head turned from him he won't see me as any kind of threat. I reached out again and he growled I flinched but didn't pull my hand back (his growl seemed softer than before so I felt that he wouldn't attack me) instead I stopped "come on trust me." I pleaded under my breath. My breath caught in my throat when I felt a pressure on my hand a scaly smooth pressure. I opened my eyes a fraction and saw the dragon with his eyes closed, snout pressed against my hand. I gasped slightly causing him to pull his face away from my hand his eyes were big orbs. He shook his head his eyes turning into slits and glided off to a corner of the cove shrouded in shadows. I smiled pleased with myself. I had done it and was still in one piece

"Ok I have to admit I didn't expect you to pull it off but you did congratulations." I span around shocked by the sudden sound. Arden was standing next to me smiling a lot of that was happening today.

"And you said it was stupid. Come on we need to get home."

"Why it's only-" he took out his phone and his face showed pure shock "-4. How's it 4? We left at 25 past 12!" I stared at him my eyes were wide. He grabbed my hand and started running towards the hole in the wall

"How's it 4? You said we'd be back before the end of school my dad's gonna freak, he already hates me going to normal school." I told him as we got through the hole and started running through the woods.

8. Chapter 8

sorry it's been forever since I updated my laptop wouldn't let me add a new chapter

"Come on we have to hurry! Your dads not the only one who'll freak my mum's gonna ground me forever" Arden yelled at me pulling me closer so I was running next to him. We ran as fast as we could swerving around trees till we got to the edge of the woods. He took out his phone to see what time it was I looked across and saw it was quarter past 4

"We should run more often maybe then we wouldn't be so late" I panted out bent over trying to get rid of my stitch.

"From the state you're in I say we don't and just leave earlier or just wait till after school" I nodded and walked cautiously towards the edge of the trees. I saw Gobber walking towards us

"Have you seen hiccup?" he asked someone walking past. I couldn't see who because they were facing away from us. The person shook their head and continued to wherever they were going "oh god her father's going to kill me I promised I wouldn't lose her I'm just glad he's working late"

Arden looked at me "what?"

"Gobber knows your dad?"

"Yeah they're best friends." He stared at me dumbfounded "you should see them at mine they're like 2 teenage girls gossiping" he laughed slightly and of course Gobber heard him. He turned to us and asked

"Hiccup what are you doing thereâ€¦is that Arden?" he walked over to us and there was no running away cause he had seen us. So we walked over to him our heads down

"Hey Gobber" I greeted quietly

"Hey" Arden greeted just as quietly

"What are you 2 doing here? Do you know how worried the school has been not to mention me I had to beg them not to call the police" he yelled harshly

"We're sorry Gobber we didn't mean to be out that long we just kinda lost track of time" I muttered apologetically

"Well that's no excuse for skipping school I expected better from you Hiccup" I looked down again feeling ashamed I looked up quickly though and took Gobber's arm leading him away from Arden.

"Gobber please don't tell my dad about this and please, please don't be mad I've told you countless times how much I like him and he asked me to come with him. You can't blame me for leaving with him" I begged whispering so Arden didn't hear us he sighed

"This won't happen again?" I shook my head quickly "ok I won't tell him but if this happens again I will tell your dad everything"

"Fair enough thanks Gobber" I hugged him in thanks and he hugged me straight back. There was a bit of a height difference so I did have to stand on my toes. I let go and walked over to Arden

"He won't tell anyone" I assured him he smiled in relief

"Thanks hiccup, I'll see you later ok I got to go before my mum has a fit" he waved as he ran off I waved back and walked back over

"We going home then?" he nodded and we walked off back towards my house.

Gobber left me alone once we got to my house saying I needed to think about what I had done. Like that would help I was well aware of

everything I had done today and the only thing I could think about was that dragon. I wanted to name it I had called it dragon a lot and that seemed very impersonal

"Sooty?" I questioned then shook my head that just seemed ridiculous. I stood from the kitchen table and ran upstairs I ran into my room and took my sketch book from in between my study books. I flipped to the page I had drawn the dragon on and tried to think of its name from the picture and what I knew about itâ€¦ this is harder than I thought. What about toothy it could work or toothless either way it has to be about its teeth seeing as it's the most noticeable thing about it.

"If I had Arden's number then I could ask him oh well I'll ask him tomorrow in science" (we had that together as well) I laid down on my bed and groaned I had science today after lunch which means that I missed it and will have to sit either on my own or with someone I hate. I closed my eyes and sighed trying to relax I had a tendency to overreact and panic. My stomach growled less than 30 seconds after I closed my eyes and I was forced to get up. I stomped downstairs very annoyed that I couldn't relax. I felt I deserved it after all I had to eat raw fish earlier to satisfy a very strange dragon. I opened the fridge and saw that there was hardly any food

"Oh great I'm gonna have to go shopping" I muttered I hated shopping never understood why girls liked it so much. It was just wandering round looking at stuff that was too expensive to buy and even if you could buy it you had nowhere you could wear it. Then again I could be being cynical because most girls don't have to go shopping for a grumpy old man. My stomach jerked and I felt like I was going to be sick "oh please tell me I haven't got food poisoning from that disgusting fish" I quietly begged breathing deep trying to calm my upset stomach. Didn't work I ended up running up the stairs and I barely made it to the toilet before I was sick, I threw up the contents of my stomach.

I was leaning over the toilet for a few minutes preying that I was done being sick but every time I went to stand I felt my stomach turn and I had to drop back down on my knees to prevent myself from being sick on the tiled floor.

"Sarah are you home?" my dad's voice rang through the house. I wiped my mouth to make sure I had gotten all the sick off my face and called back

"I'm up here dad in the bathroom!"

"What are you doing in there? No wait forget I said anything I don't want to know" he called up to me making me sigh in annoyance. I've said it before that we don't have a great relationship but when you feel awful you need your dad.

"Dad can you come up I've just been sick" I heard him running up the stairs and he burst into the room he walked over to me and crouched down rubbing my back

"What've you eaten today?" he asked

"Not much just a sandwich." I lied well it's not like I could tell him I ate raw fish.

"Maybe you have a stomach bug. You should stay home tomorrow." Any other day I would have been thrilled to stay home but I really wanted to go to school tomorrow for two reasons. 1 I wanted to ask Arden what he wanted to call the dragon, 2 I had some of the lessons I missed today tomorrow and I didn't want to be behind because then it would be even harder to catch up later

"No dad I'm sure I just ate something that was off it'll pass I can go tomorrow" I assured him pushing myself up and off my knees them popping as I did. He didn't look convinced but dropped the subject once I promised I'd go straight to bed.

Arden's POV

Hiccup saved us when Gobber came over. I couldn't hear what they were saying since they were whispering and had walked away from me but whatever she said to him worked. When I got home my mum was already there sitting in front of the TV looking very angry I decided not to disturb her and started running up the stairs as silently as I could

"Arden." I froze and walked back down the steps going over to her

"Hi mum sorry I'm late." I apologised

"The school called said you weren't there after lunch along with that Sarah" I cringed at how she said her name and I have no idea why I knew my mum didn't like Sar- I mean hiccup but it wasn't her she didn't like it was her dad. She shouldn't judge her based on her feelings for her dad

"We kinda left early" I admitted but quickly added "but it was my idea not hers so don't be mad at her" my mum nodded but still looked very angry

"Ok I won't drag this out your grounded for 2 weeks" I stared at her shocked. That was a bit harsh wasn't it? I mean a week would be bad enough but I decided not to argue cause I knew it would be worse if I did.

"Ok I think I'll go to bed." I mumbled dragging my feet upstairs annoyed.

While I lay in my bed my stomach started to tighten and I sat up straight having a horrid sour taste in my mouth. I slid out of bed and walked over to the bathroom which luckily was opposite my room. With each step I took I groaned and cursed that dragon in the woods thinking it would have been better if I had just let Hiccup eat the fish and pretended that I had but I couldn't do that to her, I don't know why but I just can't. I dropped down over the toilet and started dry heaving after about 30 seconds of that I finally threw up clutching my stomach with each heave "I wish I never went into the woods that day" I groaned. I was sick a few more times before I felt it was safe to get up. I flushed the toilet and walked back to my room sprawling out on my bed and burying my face in my pillow hoping that Hiccup wasn't going through what I was.

I fell asleep shortly after I laid on my bed and slept through the

rest of the day and night "Arden wake up will you? You've got to get ready for school" I felt my mum shake me I swatted her hand away

"No don't wanna" I complained like a 4 year old

"Tough now get up and get some breakfast" I groaned in annoyance all I wanted to do was stay in bed but my mum would never let me. I propped myself up on my hands and dragged myself up and gave my mum a slight glare for making me get up when I felt dreadful. "Don't be like that now get dressed and come down to get some breakfast"

"Not hungry" I told her half stomping out my room and down the stairs.

Hiccup's POV

I didn't have any breakfast fearful that I would be sick again. Thankfully my dad had to go to work early so it wasn't a problem. I left my house half an hour earlier than I should have so I could go to the bus stop and wait for Gobber. When my dad left he would always look after me. I sat down on the kerb placing my bag beside me. I didn't have to wait long for Gobber to arrive. When he pulled up I stood grabbing my bag and walked over to him. He had opened the door and greeted me with a smile that I happily returned. I was glad that he wasn't angry about yesterday anymore I can't stand it when he's angry with me it actually bothers me more than it does with my dad

"Hey Gobber"

"Morning hiccup what's wrong you look awful?"

"Thanks. You really know how to make a girl feel good" I stated my voice full of sarcasm

"Sorry but seriously you don't look well maybe you should go home and get in bed" it was obvious he was concerned I didn't get ill easily and when I did it was usually pretty bad

"I'm fine Gobber just a stomach bug" I assured him going to my seat and laying my bag down on my legs. Once I sat down I interlocked my fingers waiting patiently for Gobber to set off and pick everyone else up.

Arden was the last to be picked up along with Ruff and Tuffnut. They ran on separating as soon as they stepped on the bus. Ruff going over to Sally who hadn't stopped glaring at me since she had been picked up and Tuff going to an empty seat waiting for Arden. He came on last looking just as awful as I did maybe a bit better. I heard him groan to himself as he passed Gobber

"Arden you feeling ok you don't look too good?" Gobber asked. He nodded and kept walking. My eyes followed him as he walked past Tuffnut and over to the single seat opposite mine. What? Why wasn't he sitting with Tuffnut like usual? He sat down and smiled slightly at me. I smiled back but immediately stopped when I felt everyone's eyes on us. I blushed I hated people looking at me

"I take it you feel just as bad as I do?" he asked me not caring that people were looking. I nodded slightly fearful that my voice would

crack if I spoke "not surprised and I guess it's my fault we're like this. Sorry" he apologised. I had to answer him I prayed my voice would be ok

"Don't worry about it it's not all your fault" I admitted thankfully my voice was steady. I looked at the people staring at us and saw Sally was glaring at me. Ruff was in front of her grinning evilly I gulped subconsciously preparing myself for the day ahead.

****hope this made up for it please review****

9. Chapter 9

Form ran by quick and before I knew it the bell for first had rung and I had science with Sally and Arden. Great I know. I walked to the room gripping my bag tighter. I saw Arden leaning against the wall by science talking to Tuff he looked awful. As I got closer to them I could hear them talking. Tuff was going on and on nagging him asking what he was thinking talking to me. That it was bad enough that he had to sit next to me in English but talking to me out of the classroom was just unacceptable. I sighed to myself and walked over to the room acting like I hadn't heard a word. I stood opposite Arden who looked at me with a slight smile. I smiled back but immediately regretted it

"What are you looking at hiccup?" Tuff spat at me "stop flirting with him he is way out of your league" my smile dropped and I looked at the ground

"Why'd you do that I smiled at her?" Arden asked I couldn't believe it was he standing up for me. No he couldn't be I was imagining it

"Fine, fine whatever she still shouldn't be doing it" Tuff mumbled.

"Come in class" the classroom door opened and I saw a bald man in a suit standing tall over us. I suddenly felt very small and was glad I wasn't here yesterday. On second thought no I wasn't I definitely wasn't. Who knew how strict he was I could be caned for all I knew. I looked to my right and saw a line of kids march up and pass me into the room. When Sally passed she stomped on my foot causing me to wince in pain. Arden walked passed me looking like he was going to be sick and I walked slowly behind feeling the exact same way

"Who are you two?" the teacher asked staring down at us

"Um we're in your class." I mumbled not wanting to meet his gaze

"And where were you yesterday?" I was about to answer with a stuttered reply when Sally cut in

"Sir, Arden had to go to the dentist and hiccup left at lunch through the woods" my mouth dropped this was so unfair she was covering for Arden but selling me out

"Ok then Arden, right?" he nodded "you can sit down by Sally.
Hiccup see me after class you can sit on the spare table at the

back" perfect first impression he already knows me by my dreadful nickname and I'm in trouble. I've never been in trouble I thought cursing Sally for getting Arden out of trouble but not me. I shouldn't be surprised though I knew she pretty much hated the ground I walked on.

I couldn't pay attention during class I kept feeling queasy and when I didn't my mind would drift to Arden and Sally. They could become a couple and I wouldn't be able to do anything about it. Sure me and Arden met and fed a dragon but Sally was more in his league if that makes any sense. She was miles more popular than I was and he knew her a lot better than he knew me.

"Hiccup pay attention class is almost over and you've had that spaced out look on your face for more than half of it" our teacher (whose name I had discovered was Mr Bennett) yelled from the front of the class. My face heated from embarrassment when everyone looked back at me. Some were laughing and I bent my head trying my best to disguise the red covering my face.

"Sorry sir" I apologised keeping my head down

"That's ok now pay attention" the bell rang as he finished his sentence "you're dismissed" he sighed and we all silently left the room

"Hiccup come here please" Mr Bennett stopped me. I turned and walked over to him

"Yes sir?" I asked him though I knew what he wanted

"You have a detention at lunch for skipping yesterday. I don't want to see that happen again is that clear hiccup?" I nodded

"Completely. Oh and Sir my name's Sarah, Hiccups just a nickname"

"Ok Sarah off you go before you're late for your next lesson" I ran off down the empty corridor.

I made it to my next lesson (English) just as everyone else was walking in. I struggled to slow my momentum and nearly crashed into the person in front of me Sally

"Watch where you're going hiccup" she spat at me staring me straight in the eye it was kind of intimidating

"Sally hurry up will you? We can deal with her at lunch" Ruffnut came over dragging her away. I walked into the classroom last looking down and walked over to Arden, I have to admit I felt better once I sat down because I had to ask him something and I couldn't wait too.

"Ok class you can continue with your stories while I take the register" Mr Smith walked over to his desk and started calling out names

"Hey Arden I have to ask you something" I whispered to him

"Yea what is it hiccup?" he whispered back

"You know that dragon?" he nodded "well I think we should name him." He smiled at me laughing quietly I blushed out of embarrassment

"What do you think we should call him?" he asked still smiling

"w-well I have 2 options toothyâ€|" he chuckled making me blush more "or t-toothless" I stuttered out the last name and he looked like he was actually thinking about it

"I like toothless, we should call him that it's a good idea hic-Sarah" he just called me Sarah this is amazing he called me by my real name. I could scream, of course I'm not going to but I could. It means he likes me this is the best day of my life minus the detention and feeling like I could throw up the contents of my stomach. I was grinning and by the look in his face he could tell why "I take it it's been a while since a kid at school called you-"

"Sarah Haddock" Mr Smith called out my name I looked up and he was staring at me

"Oh yes Sir" he nodded and went back to taking the register

"As I was saying it must have been a while since you've been called your real name by someone at school" I nodded "well how about I call you Sarah when we're with toothless" I smiled at him again he called me Sarah and the dragon toothless officially the best day ever

"I was thinking that cos it's always in that cove I don't think it can get out we could bring it food you know as long as we don't have to eat it asâ€|"

Mr Smith looked around the class "Who's talking?" I looked down till he went back to his work

"Anyway what was I talking about oh I almost forgot I petted it and you couldn't I petted a dragon and you didn't" I boasted and he scowled at me

"I could have petted it I was just being nice and letting you"

"Yea, yea whatever before I forget we have to go see toothless later today. I want to make him a tail fin see if we can get him to fly again" I told him turning away from him and getting up to get our work so I had an excuse not to talk to him. I had already been in trouble once today and I wasn't in a hurry to be again.

During lesson Arden kept asking me why I wanted to get that dragon to fly and I would simply answer 'if you lost your leg and someone thought they could help, you would take the help but if your mum forbid you from getting help because she wanted you to stay with her what would you do? You would take the help and leave your mum. Now toothless can't leave us so he would attack you' he would stop talking after that trying to make sense of what I had said. Once he thought he figured it out he would ask me a follow up question but I would keep my answer the same every time

"hiccup can you please just answer me this one question?" he asked I

nodded slightly cause I could feel Sally's eyes burning into the back of my head "do you feel ok cause you look terrible" I couldn't believe he said I looked terrible. Had he even looked in a mirror this morning?

"Stomach bug probably from the spit covered fish we had the other day and I presume you feel the same cause you look just as bad" I answered and it was his turn to nod

"is it that obvious?" he asked smiling at me I got nervous in case Sally was still watching so I gave the smallest smile I could while it still being considered a smile. He seemed to notice but for some reason decided not to question me on it

"Arden what have you done this lesson?" we looked up to see Mr Smith standing over us "well um" he started but was cut off

"It's not his fault he didn't do much work sir its Hiccup's she won't stop talking to him. It's like she can't take a hint" my mouth dropped not again. Sally had blamed me for something while letting Arden get away with it

"Is that true Arden is Hiccup disturbing you?" he asked. Are you kidding me? Now he's calling me Hiccup! I finally get Arden to call me Sarah when we weren't at school and now our teachers calling me Hiccup. He doesn't even know how the nickname started "if she is I can move her and put Sally here instead, her work is very good and if I put her here I'm sure you can quickly make up the time you've lost" he continued before he stopped waiting for Arden to answer his question

"Hiccup wasn't disturbing me, in fact she was helping me because I was stuck" I quickly turned round just in time to see Sally's face drop and her eyes flair in anger

"Oh, ok then carry on" Mr Smith walked away and I grinned at Arden

"Thanks" I whispered

"No problem" he whispered back "but it's not like it was much of a contest was it I was obviously going to choose you over Sally." This is great I can find out more about what he likes about me

"Really why was it obvious?"

"It's obvious because you don't bully people, you don't lie to get your own way, you don't manipulate people and we have a lot more in common not to mention the fact that we have a dragon together that's basically a marriage contract" he explained adding a slight joke to the end which make me laugh slightly

"That's nice of you but honestly who would you have chosen if you had the choice at the beginning of the year?"

"Honestly? Sally. But that was before I knew what you were like" he added the last part straight away seeing the slight hurt in my eyes. I smiled sadly and turned to my work.

**I know it's been forever but I've been so ill my mum banned me from

the computer. So please review and I'm sorry it's been so long and since I'm better now I should be able to update quicker**

10. Chapter 10

Well I said I'd update quicker and I have. So once you've read please review and tell me what you like and don't like

The rest of the day flew by and was quite nice despite the dirty looks I got from Sally and Ruff mainly Sally. I had gotten a lift home by Gobber who still didn't completely trust me to stay the whole day and I have to admit that was kind of insulting. I only skipped once and he knew I wasn't going to do it again yet he still didn't trust me completely. But without a doubt the thing that made my day was going to see that dragon. I was so excited I had even bought a bag full of fish for him. Obviously I told Arden in our last class together to buy one too so the dragon could have a proper meal. Now we were walking together through the woods each carrying a bag with 10 fish in

"You seem really giddy" Arden's voice brought me out of my thoughts. I looked at him smiling like a child on its way too Disney world

"Yea I guess I am. I'm just so excited and not just on seeing the dragon again. To be honest I'm terrified of that I'm excited because I saw that it had one tail fin and I want to see if it's possible to make a prosthetic fin for him" I blurted out my plan and he looked at me like I was insane

"What? How do you expect to get close enough to see? In case you haven't noticed it still doesn't fully trust us and I haven't petted it yet so I wouldn't be much good at keeping its attention" he asked half laughing

"That's why we have this much fish so you can keep its attention" I explained he shook his head and chuckled at me I was going to ask why he was laughing but we had arrived at the cove by that time.

"I'm so excited to see if my plan is possible cos if it is he won't be stuck in here for the rest of his life" I was practically jumping from anticipation as we walked into the cove "hey toothless we're back and we brought food." I called "oh and if you were wondering we named you toothless cos otherwise we would be calling you dragon all the time and that seemed impersonal"

"Why did you do that?" Arden laughed

"I was explaining, what's wrong with that?"

"Nothing" he kept laughing but stopped when toothless jumped out in front of us sitting like a dog by our feet, his eyes orbs

"Hi toothless we brought lunch" I told him holding out my bag of fish "or is it dinner?" I wondered looking at Arden for an answer, he only shrugged "oh I nearly forgot we gave you a name but you don't know ours do you?" toothless shook his head and I nudged Arden indicating that I wanted him to tell him our names

"Fine" he sighed "my names Arden and this is Sarah but most people know her as hiccup" toothless laughed slightly when he said hiccup and I scowled at both of them

"You know toothless I could have called you sooty" I grinned at him and it was his turn to scowl I nudged Arden again and motioned for him to give the fish to toothless. He reached into his bag and threw a fish to toothless who ate it in one "I need to go look at his tail can you feed him both bags but slowly? I need to make a sketch in the back of my maths book that I can use as blue prints for his prosthetic tail" I whispered to him he nodded and I snuck off. When he held out another fish for toothless to eat I knelt down next to him and pulled my math book out of my bag that I kept with me the entire way here. I took out my pencil and sketched his tail out on the back page of my book. I turned the page over and on the opposite side I drew a quick plan of how his tail should look and added the joins to the other tail that his prosthetic would need along with a strap and a buckle to keep it secure

"Hey Sarah you almost done cos he defiantly is" I looked up happy he called me by my actual name and saw toothless had a bag over his head and was turning his head trying to get out

"Why did you give him the bag?" I asked packing my things up figuring I had enough to make a prototype

"I didn't he took it and it's not like I can just take it back considering that he is a dragon and can kill me with a flick of his wrist" he whispered harshly

"Yea, yea whatever you say now come on I need to get home. I have a few things there that I can use to make the tail" I walked over to him and took the bag off toothless' head "goodbye toothless we'll see you tomorrow" I put my hand on his head and smiled when I felt him press himself into my hand

"This is so unfair" I heard Arden whine

"Ok then you pet him" I took my hand off his head and grabbed Arden's hand moving it closer to toothless' head he growled slightly "shh it's ok toothless he won't hurt you in fact if it wasn't for him you would still be trapped" I told him in a soothing voice. Toothless tilted his head then nodded pushing his head against Arden's hand I could feel him tense but soon relax "happy now?" I asked

"Defiantly" he answered looking at me grinning

"Good now let's go, we'll see you later toothless we have some big work to do by tomorrow" I pulled Arden away and waved bye to toothless who nodded back. I ran out of the cove dragging Arden with me.

Toothless' POV

I watched the humans leave I think they said their names were Sarah and Arden but honestly I was thinking more about my name than theirs. Toothless. They gave me a name based on something they liked about me not like those Vikings did to my ancestors. They gave us a name out of hatred, night fury, but no matter how much I despise those Vikings for nearly whipping out my species I would take them any day over

their descendants, the disgusting people who captured me and stole my ability to fly. They were much worse than what I had heard about the Vikings. They had sophisticated weapons and nets that could be launched with weights attached to the ends. Not to mention the bolas that had captured me and was the cause of my tails amputation. But the worst thing was those humans had been in contact with them I could smell their disgusting scent on them. The other day and even today I could still catch a faint stench of them.

Though those two seemed nice and I did trust them. The girl more than the boy probably because he had a knife on him when we first met but the girl did say that he freed me so he couldn't be that bad. Oh well I shook my head and walked over to the lake for a drink.

While I was drinking I thought back to what Sarah had said to Arden. She said something like I have to go home I have some stuff for the tail, what tail? Mine? No of course not that's just stupid. Why would she make me a tail and even if she did it would be pointless I could never regain my flight. Once I had my drink I made myself a bed by burning some of the grass in a corner and patting it down to make it nice and comfy "ahh this is nice, I hope they come back soon I'm dying to find out what Sarah was talking about" I sighed content for the first time in a while, I had a full stomach, a comfy bed and I had something to look forwards to in the morning or evening whichever it was but I hoped morning.

11. Chapter 11

Arden's POV

We were walking through the woods neither in a hurry to get home. I didn't want to return home because I knew as soon as I walked through the doors it would be straight to bed, stay there till super and then back to bed. But I didn't know why Sarah didn't want to go home. From what I knew she had a great house and Gobber hadn't told her dad so she wasn't grounded like I was. But I knew it wasn't any of my business so I didn't ask. Instead I decided to take the opportunity to ask about how she planned to make the fake tail.

"Hey Sarah," I started and she looked at me quizzically "how do you plan to make the tail?" she smiled as she thought of her answer.

"I have a basic idea but you have to help" she answered.

"Sure whatever you need I'll be happy to help. Anything to get out of the house my mum grounded me and the only way I can get out of the house is for school. This gives me the perfect excuse cos I can tell her I have to help someone with a project" I smiled sheepishly at her because of my admission but I couldn't help but see the slight disappointment that flashed across her face. I was going to ask what was wrong but figured it wouldn't do much good "so how did your dad take it?" I asked trying to break the uncomfortable silence that had enveloped us.

"He doesn't know, or at least I don't think he does. But if he does then I'm not getting punished for it but then again I don't think he knows because I was ill when he came home and no one gets yelled at when they're ill. Do they?" she was rambling on and ordinarily I would have found it terribly frustrating but today I was feeling 100%

calm and I even enjoyed listening to the rambling.

Sarah was talking, well complaining the rest of the way out of the woods and it didn't bother me in the slightest much to my surprise. I mean I knew that she wasn't annoying me that much but to ask questions about something you understood very little off wasn't very good. I kept thinking that I would snap at her but I was restraining myself from giggling at her well placed jokes and yes you read right _giggling _like a school girl which would be bad considering I'm a boy.

"Hey Arden what are you doing out here? Your mum just called mine and my mum was grilling me on where you were" oh great Tuff was here and I'm with Sarah. I just hope I can come up with a good excuse as to why we're together and why I wasn't at home when he knew all too well that I was grounded from skipping yesterday.

"Hey Tuff" I greeted as he came over. I glanced at Sarah and saw her nervously biting her lip. Tuff snapped at her earlier and I could tell she wasn't in a hurry for it to repeat itself. I smiled reassuringly to her.

"Arden like I just said why are you here?" Tuff was standing in front of me and hadn't noticed Sarah at least I didn't think he had "why are you here? Are you stalking him or something? Just leave will you Arden's too nice to tell you to get lost but I'm going to do him a favour. Leave" I saw her about to leave and I instinctively grabbed her arm.

"Tuff she's here cos she's helping me with my work in English, that's also why I'm not at home I'm going to hers so she can help me and I would have called my mum and told her but I left my phone at home. If you call her and tell her to go to my room then she will see my phone there" I explained praying that I did leave my phone there and that it wasn't in my bag.

"Oh, ok well I guess I'll call my mum tell her and leave you two to do your work" he sounded a little disheartened that I had Sarah stay and him leave. But he was mean to her and I'm starting to like her but not in that way I think. I shook my head just as he turned to walk away and I was about to do the same thing when Sarah asked.

"Why did you shake your head?" I looked at her and saw no reason to lie we already had a huge secret we could keep so one tiny one won't make a difference (so I told half the truth)

"I was starting to feel guilty and almost called him back over. I tend to do that when he uses that tone he knows I break when he uses it" I could swear I saw her snicker "what?" I asked involuntarily smirking at her

"Nothing" she lied, her lips going into a thin line as she tried to stop laughing

"Whatever, come on lets go to yours" I shook my head again deciding to drop the subject

"Yea come on before Gobber has another panic attack and calls my dad. I don't need him knowing I had a boy over. We don't have the best

relationship and if he found out then I would never be able to talk to anyone again" I laughed at her thinking it was a joke but I saw she was serious, wow is he that overprotective. I smirked at her and we continued going back to her house.

****sorry for the wait****

12. Chapter 12

We were outside her house and I was waiting for her to open the door. She had told me to turn around so I couldn't see. Which I couldn't really understand I mean it's not like I was going to break in or anything

"You coming?" her voice broke me out of my thoughts and I span around to see her motioning for me to go in

"Yea" we went in and I stared around. Her house was huge compared to mine and her TV was massive I heard her laugh "what?"

"Your face! My house isn't that good" I looked at her saying are you serious and waved my arm in front of me

"Can you not see it, its miles better than my house I'm jealous" I was being truthful but she didn't seem to believe me

"Come with me I have to get some stuff from my room" she started up the stairs and I was feeling nervous about going round her house in case I broke anything. I wasn't exactly careful and I had the worst luck when it came to expensive things but I pushed those feelings away and ran to catch up with her.

Her room was just as impressive as the rest of the house and I could see a laptop laying on the floor half hidden under her bed. This must have been what she used when she was researching toothless.

"Can you hurry up what if your dad comes by and finds us here?" I begged putting my hand on her shoulder and giving her a gentle shake.

"Patience is a virtue" was her only reply. Yea right was all I could think. "Where is it?" I couldn't tell if she was talking to me or herself I determined herself and kept quiet. Seeing as I had nothing to do I sat on her bed drumming my fingers on the covers waiting patiently for her to gather what she needed. "Finally" I heard her groan. I looked over and saw she was holding a cardboard box.

"What is it?" I asked

"A box" she answered with a 'duh' tone.

"I can see that I mean what's inside" I told her slightly aggravated.

"A present" this was getting annoying

"Will you stop being so vague" I was annoyed and made no effort to hide it, she giggled slightly at my outburst.

"Temper" oh my god.

"Will you just tell me" I begged.

"My aunt sent me a leather jacket a few years ago its pure leather and really uncomfortable so I don't wear. It the only time I wear it is when she visits but she hasn't been round in 6 months and all its doing is gathering dust. So why not put it to good use and turn it into a dragon's tail" she explained and I was silently shocked at how ingenious it was. Placing it on her bed she asked "happy?" sarcasm filled her voice, I stifled a laugh and walked to her door opening it for her.

"Ok anything else?" she nodded

"Yea I need metal like strong metal the kind that doesn't bend easy" I thought for a minute when I had an idea

"Why don't we go see Gobber he has a prosthetic hand he made himself he has to have strong metal." I saw her smile at me and I was kind of proud of myself "wait do you know where he lives?" I asked she waved her hand

"Please I've known Gobber for years. I've slept at his house countless times I could walk there in my sleep"

"Ok well lead the way" I motioned for her to walk out of the room and followed once she had.

We were stood outside Gobber's house and were waiting for him to answer. I knew he was in cos I could hear him making his way to the door but with a peg leg he wasn't the fastest person on earth. The door swung open and Gobber stood before us, his fake hand a mug filled with god knows what

"Sarah Arden what can I do ya for?" he asked that smile plastered on his face like it usually was

"Can we borrow some metal like iron or something along those lines please?" she asked going closer to him and holding her hands together like she was praying. I thought he would say no. I mean why would he give us metal when we had no explanation ready for him and when he was still a little mad at us for skipping?

"Course you can love," he smiled motioning with his hand for us to come in "just tell me what you need it for" I had no answer but apparently Sarah had been thinking of one on our way here

"I kind of broke something at home and I need to fix it do you mind?" he shook his head

"Not at all I'll just tell yer father first" she scowled and he laughed "you know I'm only messing lass. Come on pick what you need and off you go. I'm not having you spend forever here and when you 2 go to yours your father being home and going off on one when he sees you together you know what he's like jumping to conclusions" she laughed and I didn't know whether or not I should as well cos I wasn't sure if he was being serious or not.

I sat on Gobber's couch waiting for them to gather what we needed, I

was fidgeting while I waited feeling pretty useless

"Come on I've got what we need, we can go back to mine now I need to get it fixed before my dad comes home later" I looked up as she walked in, her arms full of iron poles that had been cut into smaller pieces so she could carry them

"Want me to carry some of that for you?" I asked standing up

"No" she answered bluntly turning round and heading for the door I looked after her

"Don't look so confused lad she likes being independent and with her dad she can't do that too often so whenever she gets the chance she revels in it" Gobber explained patting my shoulder before walking with me to the door "well I'll see you 2 tomorrow and you don't have to worry your dad will be none the wiser" we left the house side by side waving goodbye to Gobber

"You sure you don't want any help? I get being independent but you can still be it and have a little help" I tried to urge her into letting me help a little. Though I had my doubts that she would but surprisingly she handed over half of the iron sticks. I smiled satisfied with the result I had gotten and we walked almost silent back to hers.

I'm sorry it's so short I've had the worst writers block promise the next will be longer

13. Chapter 13

Hiccups POV

I don't usually let people help me when I have the chance to be independent but my crush on Arden overrid my own pride and I gave in and in a way I was grateful. That lot weighed a ton but in many ways I wasn't cos we walked in silence the entire way. I felt a need to break the silence but I had no idea how to do it but lucky for me Arden did it in my place

"What happened to your mum?" ok I'm starting to think that giving him the poles wasn't the best idea

"What-" I started but he cut me off answering for me

"I saw her a lot, years ago but one day she just vanished. No one knows what happened but there were a few speculations but no one was sure" I nodded sadly remembering my mum laying in that hospital bed, needles stuck in her and all sorts of machines surrounding her. I shook the memories from my mind and looked at his slightly confused face. I decided that I might as well answer

"There was a car crash and she was in hospital for 3 days before she died in her sleep" my voice wavered a bit at the end and I fought to keep back the tears. Even after 2 years I hadn't fully come to terms with the fact that I'll never see my mum again

"Oh I'm sorry I didn't mean to bring back memories I was just curious" he seemed to sense my voice change and his voice was

apologetic. I smiled slightly at him to show I was fine. We had arrived back at my house now and I was relieved to see that there wasn't a car parked outside. As we walked to the front door I saw an error, if we both had our hands full how would we open the door?

"Can you get the keys for me?" I asked

"My hands are full" he asked like I hadn't realised

"I know that, pass them over and take my keys from my front pocket" I was slightly irritated and I could tell by the look he was wondering why I didn't pass him the rest of them and do it myself and to be honest I just didn't want to. Ignoring me he balanced the iron sticks on one arm taking mine from me with his newly free hand grinning at me rolling my eyes. I pulled out my keys opening the door and closing it behind me before he could walk through. I heard it opening behind me and a few seconds later along with some annoyed grumbles it closed

"Don't be petty" he commented walking up behind me

"I'm not" I defended

"Course now where do you want them?" he held out his arms

"oh well just wait here I need to get the box with the leather jacket in it from my bed" I ran off to grab the box trying to think what to do once I had everything I needed cos truth be told I had no idea I was kind of making it up as I go along. "I could always go to that abandoned blacksmiths on the far end of the village. But it is condemned and if it collapses while we're in there it could kill us" I was muttering to myself as I picked up the box opening it to check it actually held the jacket, it did, before I closed the box again and rushing down the stairs to see Arden waiting there looking a little bored "come on I'm ready and before you ask we're going to the old blacksmiths" he tilted his head slightly in confusion "you know the one that's supposedly haunted" I explained

"Oh right but before we go can we get a bag? These are really starting to dig in my arm"

"Yea sure wait a second and hold this for me" I placed the box on top of the iron rods and walked past him. Before he could argue I opened a drawer taking out a strong big bag and turned to go back to him. Only to find he had snuck up behind me I jumped and slapped his arm

"You scared me half to death" he just grinned and I couldn't keep up my angry appearance

"Only half I'll keep that in mind" he joked I took the box off him and opened the bag for him to tip the iron poles in.

"Come on then I don't want to take any longer than what's absolutely necessary" I handed him the bag tucking the box under my arm and walking past him. I heard him following behind me and smirked at the knowledge that he relied on me to make decisions on what to do and that if it weren't for me then he probably wouldn't have even found toothless. I was the cause of this and him being my friend. I

couldn't stop the happiness that surrounded me with those thoughts. I left the house leaving it unlocked. I didn't see the point everyone knew each other in the village and there wasn't really any crime maybe the odd stolen phone but nothing major. I led the way to the blacksmith humming to myself the entire way acting as if no one was there. Actually the only reason I even remembered he was there was from the odd annoyed grunt.

"Come on slowpoke" I called back to him earning a series of annoyed grunts. I laughed at him I was enjoying this and I was especially enjoying the fact that I had gotten over the hiccupping thing and he considered me a friend. I heard rustling in the trees that were on our left

"You know I prefer the shy-" I cut him off

"Shh I heard something" I held my hand out behind me and as luck would have it he walked straight into me outstretched hand

"What?" I heard his muffled question

"Shh just listen there's something going on in there" I focused my hearing and glanced behind to see Arden doing the same thing. Sure enough there were voices but I couldn't make out any specific words. We crept towards the voices and I could see men in hunters uniforms and guns resting on their shoulders. I tried to hear what they were saying again and this time I was successful

"Why are we even here sir the dragon landed in the other side of the woods?" they knew about toothless I looked back and saw the same panicked expression on his face that I was sure I had on mine

"Yes I know the dragon is in the other side of the woods but it will still be bound in the bolas. The part of the woods where it landed is too thick for us to get through so we must find another path. Do you want to risk a civilian coming across the beast and being attacked or worse eaten?" The person the first man addressed got right in his face

"Uh n-no sir" the man we only knew as sir smirked and backed up

"Good now keep looking for a path we can use. I hear from that old head teacher at the school that this place is riddled with hidden paths that lead all over the woods most nearing the dense area, I also hear curious little kids come by often to try and find these paths. But some simply come to see who can brave the longest in the haunted blacksmith. Ha kids are stupid. Anyway if that happens just tell them that the animal we're tracking has run this way got it?" his little speech was responded with a chorus of yes sirs they were so in sync I almost laughed at how robotic they sounded.

"Shh" I looked back to see Arden directly behind me. I blush at the fact that he's so close but I quickly hid it

"I didn't say anything" seeing his questioning look I added "not including that" grabbing my arm and pulling me closer he whispered

"You giggled" I did? Damn I thought I stopped myself

"Come on we have to go now remember your dad" he continued and I nodded allowing myself to be led away.

****please read and review****

14. Chapter 14

****hope you like this chapter I can't count how many times I've changed it****

Once we made it inside I had set everything out on an old work desk "so how did you heat coal in the past?" I asked

"It wasn't that long ago maybe 10 years at most but I think it'll be like following instincts or something along those lines" I didn't see the logic in his theory but I wasn't about to tell him that

"Ok maybe we can try and get it to work"

"What's all this we stuff why can't you do it?" I think I know why he hasn't got a girlfriend he has no idea how to be a gentleman

"Just set it up I want to have a look around see what I can find to help me—and you you're helping I'm not letting you worm your way out of it." I heard an annoyed groan but ignored it and started my exploration round the old blacksmiths.

On my way round I found a few doors most of which had been boarded up. The last one however wasn't in fact it was swinging open on one of its hinges. The other appeared to have broken off from the door but stuck to the frame. I went into the room, looking round there wasn't much in here but there was a needle and thread

"Why is that in here? This is a blacksmiths not a sewing circle" I muttered to myself shrugging I grabbed them figuring they could come in handy at some point "is the coal ready yet!" I yelled as I walked back to the first room I was in

"I don't know they're glowing a little if that means anything" I had no clue but it sounded good

"Ok then put one of the iron pipes on the coals but only the tip ok" I yelled out some instructions to him as I stepped through the door

"Why the tip?" he asked as he followed out my instructions

"Cos I know what I want doing and I need you to do that ok" he rolled his eyes but didn't say anything else "ok so I found some stuff for sewing weird right but anyway while that's heating up and softening I'll start turning this jacket into the tail fin" he looked at me questioningly "I'm just forming the basic shape so it's easier to place the iron" he nodded

"You think I should start flattening it now save a little time?"

I smiled "Yea thanks we really need to save time" he nodded going over to a shelf that still held a few tools

"Why are there so many tools left? Whoever used this place before certainly didn't hang around long enough to get his stuff" I smirked

"Maybe they're superstitious"

"Maybe" he started hitting the softening metal and I turned my attention back to making my jacket a fin.

"Hey I've done now what?" I tuned from my spot to see him holding a pipe with a flattened tip

"Set another on the coal to heat up and while you're doing that find something to make a hole in the one you've flattened and be quick it'll be easier when it's still hot. Oh and don't flatten the other end and I need 5 of them" ok maybe I was being a little bossy but I couldn't help it

"Yes sir" he smirked his voice was full of sarcasm. Shaking my head I ignored him finishing off the tail fin. Now all I had to do was wait for him to finish so I could sew it all together and hopefully it would work. If it didn't I would look really stupid. I only had a few little things to finish on the shape and once I had I could either help him or just leave him to it. Most of the time I would have chosen the latter but since I was in a rush I had to go with the former. Finishing off I turned to him

"I'll help" I walked over doing what I knew I needed doing exactly right and he couldn't do without a long explanation.

"Thanks. You know you can be quite bossy"

I smirked slightly "yea I tend to do that every now and then probably why I don't take charge in group work" he laughed though it wasn't a joke, strange.

We talked for a long time while we worked and with a lot of banging testing and starting again the fin was finally finished or so I hoped it was. Sewing together the last part to make it officially ready I proudly held out the fin opening and shutting it making sure it worked properly. It seemed suitable for a prototype so I gave a satisfied nod of approval

"So will it work?" looking it over I answered

"Yes it just needs a strap" the smile on his face dropped

"Why didn't you tell me before?" shrugging I answered

"Not important then besides that's easy it's pretty much just a belt" I stated like it was obvious which it was to me

"Oh ok so you have one?"

"No I don't, you?" he looked confused

"How do you not have one belt? Everyone has a belt" I shrugged I actually did have one but it was a hello kitty bright pink belt and I highly doubted that toothless would want to wear that and I would do

anything to stop that dragon from being angry at me. I did value my life and I was still slightly wary of him though I would never tell Arden that.

"Well I guess if you don't have one I'm gonna have to get one. Come on might as well go to mine" I stared at him. Did I just hear him right? I was going to his house. If a month ago someone had told me that I would be going to his house I would have said they were crazy but now it was actually happening "Sarah you ok? You've been dazed for a few minutes" I shook my head blinking a few times to see Arden stood in front of me looking in my eyes. I quickly looked away blushing

"Yea sorry I'm fine just trying to think how long I have till my dad comes home" I lied silently proud of myself for coming up with an excuse so quickly

"Ok so can you come?" I nodded

"Yea I can so we going?"

"Come on" he motioned for me to follow. As he walked out I gathered everything I brought with me and followed closely behind.

I stared up at his house stunned that I was actually seeing it "well come on then" I shook my head looking at him I was dazing out a lot today

"Isn't your mum in?"

"No she works late most days we're fine for a few hours"

"oh ok" I motioned for him to go in following once he had opened the door, his house was really nice and quite big, just a bit smaller than mine

"Just so you know I'm grounded so my mum can't know you were here" he told me I nodded in understanding as he led me up the stairs. "I think I have an old belt that's quite thick leather so it should be strong enough for a dragon that is if toothless doesn't just rip it off". We were outside his room and I decided to wait for him to find it telling him I'd look around for a minute while he looked. He went into his room as I set off on my little exploration. From what I had seen the house was really nice fancy but not over the top. I had found quite a few mythological books lying around that I recognised from the local library. I had looked at the date they had been checked out and most of them were quite recent. Some had even been taken out today and those ones centred on dragons

"At least he wants to help as much as I do" I don't know why but I had doubted how much he really wanted to help toothless

"Hey I got it you ready to go?" He yelled and I heard his feet tapping on the stairs as he ran down to get to me

"Yea" I couldn't help the smile that was covering my face still holding the newest book I had picked up

"What's with you?" he asked when he came face to face with me "oh right the books" he realised when he looked down seeing the book with

a dragon curled up on the cover

"Sorry but I can't help being happy knowing that you want to help toothless as much as I do" I answered letting him take the book from me "Find anything useful in it?" he nodded admiring the cover

"Yea a little about the food they like and hate but I don't know if it's valid or not we could always try it out see if it's true or just nonsense someone wrote to make money" I agreed with him but had to say this

"Yea that's fine but you're giving him the food I want to stay on his good side" I walked past him smirking at his reply

"Good let me get killed that's real nice" I heard him follow behind after the comment.

We didn't really talk after that walking in a comfortable silence to the cove while trying to fix the belt to the tail fin. While I was making it I had left a small slit in each side just big enough for the belt to fit through. It would probably need some adjustments later though depending on if it worked or not.

"Hey Sarah we're here" shaking my head I looked over at him he was looking at me slightly concerned

"Good. What's with you?" I asked genuinely confused as to why he had stopped and wasn't going into the cove

"You've been zoning out all day. You know what why don't we just put the tail fin in here till later. We can come back tonight feed him and try the fin out ok?" I nodded still a little dazed I had been stuck in my own head a lot today. I motioned for him to lead the way into the cove following closely behind.

"Hey toothless we're back but only for a moment we're coming back later but her dad'll have a fit if she doesn't get back before him and she'll never be here again. So yea oh and we're going to try and find you some extra special food to make up for it ok?" Arden yelled through the cove summing everything up in one long sentence. As soon as we got into the cove fully toothless jumped off the rock he had been sunbathing on and looked at us questioningly before his gaze shifted to what I had in my arms. He tilted his head looking thoroughly confused

"I'll explain later we're really short on time right now but we will bring you something special back and if this works then it'll give you something back you've lost" I was trying to hint at what this fin was for but it seemed that as long as it was folded up he would never know what it was for and I wasn't about to spoil the surprise. Patting his head I walked past him and over to a small rock in the ground just big enough to be a seat if I needed one. Carefully laying the fin down I went back over to them nudging Arden in the side silently telling him to pet toothless as well. He had virtually no bond with him and even though I was just starting to form one it was forming and if he was going to be here too then he needed to become friends with toothless. He did as I asked and patted the scaly head rubbing his snout receiving a purr in response. He smirked taking his hand from the head he turned to me

"We going?" I nodded "good oh and while I remember I ripped a page from the library book telling you about what dragons like and don't so we can buy some stuff to see if it works." I stared at him "I'll fix it later" he assured before leaving I turned back to toothless

"Promise we'll bring you something special" I scratched behind his ear before following after Arden but not before giving a final wave to toothless.

We were walking down the path that led to my house and I could see my dad's car wasn't there. Breathing a sigh of relief I slowed my pace which had been a near run

"Thank you god" I looked towards the sky empathising the words with my hands

"What's with you?" he asked smirking

"No dad" I answered swaying happily as I walked

"Hey Sarah" I saw him stop and stopped just after

"Yea what is it?"

"Well I was thinking that it may be a good idea for me to get your number. Obviously you'll get mine" I shook my head thinking I had heard him wrong. I opened my mouth to answer but no words came out. Just as I had formed a few words that seemed to form a coherent sentence he interrupted "So uh do you want to? I mean I'm ok if you don't I just thought it would make sense to, you know keep in touch know who's doing what" I quickly nodded

"Yea here this is mine I don't have my phone on me but I know the number" I searched my pocket for a piece of paper and also found a broken piece of lead from the top of my pencil. God knows why they're there but lucky it was. I scribbled down my number passing him the wrinkly paper. Taking out his phone he typed in the number I had written down and I saw him typing something

"No paper" he explained briefly "sent you a text, register it as mine" before putting his phone away he looked at the screen "damn I gotta go home" he placed his hand on my shoulder and kissed my cheek before running off home. I stood there stunned for a moment I hadn't just imagined that had I? The burning on my cheek confirmed that it had actually happened, my mouth hung open and I couldn't bring myself to walk back home I just stood there.

****please read review ****

15. Chapter 15

****sorry for the wait****

Arden's POV

As I was running it suddenly dawned on me what I had done and I stopped so suddenly I nearly fell, I had just kissed Sarah. I didn't know why I had it was a spur of the moment kind of thing

"I can only hope she knows it means nothing cos it didn't, right it was an accident meant nothing" I tried reassuring myself but it didn't work very well my mind kept on drifting back to the kiss and I wanted to forget but my legs were wobbly the longer that I thought about it and I wanted to set it straight with her but I just didn't have the time. My phone started beeping and vibrating and as I pulled it out I saw why. The alarm I had set earlier was going off telling me I had 5 minutes to get home before my mum was there and if I didn't want to be grounded for the rest of the year I had to rush. Stuffing my phone back in my pocket I started running, if I only had 5 minutes I had to rush it was a 15 minute run for most people.

I didn't stop for anything very aware of the time, I was elated to see my house my lungs were burning and I was on the verge of collapse but I had made it. I barely had time to close the door behind myself when my mum's car pulled up. I ran to the kitchen automatically turning the TV on and pretended to make something to eat.

"Arden I'm home" I heard the door close "Arden what have I told you about the TV you aren't allowed to watch any you're grounded or did you forget?" I heard her turn the telly off and turned to see her come into the kitchen

"Sorry"

"Any homework?" I shook my head "ok you can watch the news for half an hour" I was thrilled to hear I could watch the telly but I quickly deflated when I remembered she had said news. Oh well still better than nothing.

I had sat watching the screen bored. It may have been better than nothing but it was still boring nothing had happened it was just updates on sports, weather and something about money. The reporter then left the screen and the man who came to school a few days ago was on the screen talking with another reporter. The familiar face grabbed my attention and I tuned in turning the telly up a bit

"Thank you Samantha, I'm here with James Dawson and he's going to reveal what he can on the strange things that have been going on lately." She turned to him and asked

"So can I call you James?" he nodded "what has been going on? The people are getting very concerned, over half the animals have disappeared the local shelter is almost bare" with all that had been happening with toothless it had slipped my mind that animals had been disappearing.

"Well Lauren we have confirmed that it is a big cat that had wandered into this area. It is usually confined to the area of the woods that is inaccessible to us humans but somehow it has managed to escape from there and into the village. We must ask that while we are working to capture the animal and relocate it that no one goes out after dark or travels alone. It is a very dangerous creature and all necessary precautions must be taken" with that he finished and it was quite a convincing lie, if I didn't know the truth I was sure I would have been fooled

"Well there you have it the truth on what's going on back to you

Sam." The reporter turned back to the previous one

"Thank you Lauren just to recap. Don't go out after dark or alone. Try to limit your trips outside especially if you live near the woods. That's all from us we'll see you in a few hours goodbye." The screen turned black and adverts came on a second later

"Wonder if Sarah saw that?" I muttered to myself "oh well I'll ask her tomorrow" it then dawned on me that I had her number I searched my pocket and found the crumpled bit of scrap paper. I grabbed the house phone and dialled her number in the phone and waited for 3 rings.

"Hello?" her voice asked

"Hey it's me just wondered if you saw the news?" I could imagine her shaking her head when she answered

"No. Why"

"Oh uh just wondered cos you remember that Mr Dawson who came to school that day to tell the kids what was going on?"

"Yea why?"

"He was on the news saying they know it's a big cat and that you can't go out after dark" I only told her the important part

"Big cat sure I believe that" I could hear her sarcasm and smiled at it "You know I bet they don't want people out after dark so they have more time to look for toothless" I nodded forgetting that she couldn't see me when I finally realised I answered quickly and with a slight stutter

"Y-yea my thoughts exactly"

"So we going out after dark to see and get toothless' food? I have already brought him some fish but I think we'll need a proper basket to hold it in or our hands will end up having permanent grooves in them" I agreed with her before asking when I realised we were in a rush for when her dad came home

"Your dad didn't find it strange that you brought home bags of fish for no apparent reason"

"I told him it was for school" as if she could see my confusion she added "I told him we were doing dissection in science though I had to add in that I wasn't doing it and to make up for it buying the fish. He didn't ask why I had gotten whole fish instead of just the eyes but I think he just didn't want to bother he looked real tired"

"Oh ok so when am I going to see you?" I asked feeling slightly nervous in case it was awkward after I kissed her but based on our conversation so far I didn't think it would, she was acting like nothing had happened which I was thankful for

"I'll see you at nine by the woods near mine if that's good for you. It'll give you time to buy the basket I got the fish you buy the basket sound ok?"

"Uh yea that sounds perfect. Bye" I clicked off before she could say it back. Placing the phone next to me I hadn't noticed my mum was next to me until she made her presence known.

"Who was that?" I jumped a little turning to her

"Oh no one just a friend" I lied unintentionally biting my lip which was a classic sign of mine that I was hiding something

"Who was it really?" she asked crossing her arms obviously catching my sign

"Just a friend no one important" that wasn't really a lie to her Sarah wasn't anyone important but to me she kind of was

"Ok if you don't wanna tell me I won't force it out of you but I will find out. Any way no more TV"

"Aww come on just a little more" I protested when she took the control switching it off

"No" I grumbled under my breath before storming upstairs. I slammed my door closed and belly flopped on the bed bouncing 3 times. I knew my mum would eventually find out I had been talking to Sarah but I was willing to put it off for a while. I rolled over onto my back staring up at my white ceiling "where am I gonna get a basket?" I asked myself sighing.

She really was vague about what she wanted and that worried me slightly in case I got something she didn't like. I decided that I would use what I had seen in her house to decide. After all I wasn't the only one with a tell you could tell what she liked in her house and what wasn't her taste. Like if I asked her about something she hated she would say two words about it then it was on to the next subject but if she liked the subject then she could go on and on and on about it only stopping when she noticed she was rambling, which was usually a good amount of minutes later.

"I'm so tired" I yawned dragging my hands down my face. Figuring I could have a few hours before I had to go buy a basket for toothless or Sarah it was kind of hard to tell who it was really for, I set my alarm turning over on my side to go to sleep. "I suppose if I wake up early enough I could even go to the woods for a bit"

****please read review****

16. Chapter 16

Hiccups POV

It took me a while to make my legs work but I finally did after about 5 minutes managing to get home only to find my dad had already been there and had left me a note. Once I read it I let out an annoyed sigh. It said that he had to go to Gobber's for something. A weapon to be exact, he like many of the other people in the village, were paranoid that they would be the next to disappear so were taking what they deemed necessary precautions. Having time to kill I did my homework for school not the most exciting thing to do with my time but I had to do something or I'd go insane.

As I finished I decided it would be a good idea to fetch toothless' food so I hurried to the shop to buy as much as I could. I had taken some money my dad hid around the house that he doesn't know I know about. I managed to get a fair amount of food so much in fact that I was lopsided. I brought a range of fish that I could only remember a few types, they were salmon and Icelandic cod I also bought an eel to see if he really did hate it.

After I finished shopping I went back home trying to rush as best I could and what I found at home made me hate my luck. My dad was sitting at the table and it looked like he was doing something important. I didn't bother asking what it was as I probably wouldn't understand a word he said. Nodding a greeting I dropped the bags on the table sighing in relief as the weight was lifted from my aching arms.

"Why you so late?" he asked not looking up

"I went shopping" I answered and immediately wished I had chosen different words as he looked up at me looking a mix of confused and concerned. I wasn't sure why he was concerned but I didn't dwell on it

"Shopping? You feeling ok you're not still ill are you?" I shook my head I was past that

"No I went food shopping" again I wished I had chosen different words as this made him open the bags to see what I brought

"Fish. Why did you only buy fish?" I took a moment to think up a suitable lie and answered with little confidence

"We're dissecting in science I'm not doing it so to make up I'm buying the dissection stuff" it seemed he was paying more attention than usual today as he asked

"Why do you need whole fish? When I was at school all you needed were the eyes"

"This was cheaper" thankfully it seemed he bought my excuse and it also seemed he hadn't realised I had no money, so before he could say anything I took the bags and ran upstairs

Once I finished stacking the food on my bed I ran back down the stairs, as soon as I entered the room the phone rang, before my dad could answer it I ran over and took it from his hand

"I'm expecting a call" I lied I didn't know why I took the phone from him but it seemed my instincts on not letting him have the phone were right. I found out it was Arden. I was tempted to hang up on him though I wasn't sure why, probably because of what had just happened but it had to be important for him to be calling so I didn't. Walking from the room I discovered it was quite important because while I was doing homework and shopping I hadn't been watching TV and it turned out the one time I wasn't watching I should have been because they were talking about the animals disappearing and claiming it was a big cat. If I didn't know about toothless I would have believed that but now I was sure they're lying.

We agreed to meet later tonight to give toothless his food and I even managed to get him to buy a basket for him. After I said bye I handed my dad the phone for no clear reason he didn't need it I just felt he should have it

"Mind telling me who that was?" he asked half sceptical

"Just a friend" I waved it off before going upstairs. I didn't have anything to do but I figured I could at least do some research about other dragons since toothless couldn't be the one taking the animals as he was trapped. I knew where I could find that info as well as I had found that web page before that told me what kind of dragon toothless was.

I worked for longer than I thought I had, when I looked at the clock it had been hours and I was only slightly closer to finding out what type of dragons were coming to the village. I had found out what were the most likely ones they were gronckle's, nadders, zipplebacks, terrors and monstrous nightmares. From what I had read the nightmare was the worst one apparently they liked to light themselves on fire.

"I really don't want to see one of those" I muttered to myself closing my laptop and hiding it back under my bed. I didn't have anything to do for the next few hours so I decided to do what I usually did when I was bored. Go exploring in the woods. Running down the stairs I ran straight out the door not giving my dad any time to ask me where I was going.

I managed to make it to the woods in a few minutes probably because I was rushing as I hadn't had the chance to actually go exploring. I had been in the woods to go see toothless but that was it, I hadn't done it just cos I had nothing better to do. As I made my way through the thick weeds that covered the ground I remembered the fact that if it wasn't for this then I wouldn't have met toothless and Arden would still not like me I smiled at that thought

"Thank you my weird ways of having fun. And my awful social life" it never occurred to me that talking to myself was strange but now "now I'm talking to myself like a crazy person" I shook my head before continuing on into the woods.

****please read review****

17. Chapter 17

It amazed me the fact that I could navigate my way through almost all of the woods without thinking about it. But I didn't have time too really think about it as I collided with an unmoveable object. Dropping to the ground I rubbed my head which had hit something solid. Looking up with only one eye half open it widened it was Arden

"We've got to stop doing this I'm gonna end up covered in bruises" he held out his hand which I gladly accepted he pulled me to my feet

"Hi what you doing here?" he asked

"I could ask the same I thought you were going to the shop to buy my-I mean toothless' basket" I messed up what I was saying a little but I don't think he noticed

"Oh little slip up did we" apparently he did.

"Only slightly so why aren't you shopping" I asked starting to walk away Arden following just behind

"Going later I still have an hour or two before I have to buy it. Anyway as I'm grounded my mum has no idea I'm out so if you see her don't mention seeing me ok? I had to sneak out from my window I don't need it locking" I couldn't help laughing at him climbing out the window. I could just imagine what he would look like trying to drop from the second floor. Trying to stay away from the windows so his mum wouldn't see him "yea, yea keep laughing it up I'll tell your dad you sneak out while he's at work not to mention the skipping"

"You wouldn't" I gawked at him before tapping his chest in mock annoyance

"Yea I wouldn't but I could if I wanted to so keep that in mind" we continued our banter till it was past dark meaning we had to set off to buy toothless' basket.

We wandered through the village for a little while not knowing where to go for a basket. I didn't know why but every time we passed someone he would always walk faster or hide somewhere. But I didn't think much of it guessing it was just because he wasn't meant to be out and if someone told his mum he would get in less trouble if they thought he was on his own. We made it to the shops after deciding the best place to look would be there. We spent many minutes browsing the different kinds. It made me laugh that he was acting like a real girly girl in a clothes shop taking forever just to decide you didn't want it

"Something tells me you don't like shopping" he commented crouched down to look at the price of a medium size wicker basket

"What was your first clue? That you're the one looking through them all or the fact that I'm stood on the other side of the aisle" I asked sarcastically turning he looked at me smirking

"You just get better and better don't you" I tilted my head confused as to what he meant "you're not one of those annoying girly girls who I have to make an effort to talk to. You're someone I actually enjoy talking to. Why I didn't use to like you I'll never know. All I do know is that I was dead wrong about you before" I knew that I was blushing at his words but I didn't care

"Can you pick one please I don't want the fish on my bed going off, it'll sink" I complained though I didn't really mind, it was nice having a little down time with him not fretting about toothless or finding out about dragons. Grabbing one he had been looking at for a while he swung it up so it was resting on his shoulder.

"Fine come on then let's go pay I've got my mum's purse" he waved said purse in front of me

"Maybe I should hold that wouldn't want the cashier thinking you have

a purse" looking at the purse he seemed to be thinking for a moment before passing it to me

"Good point" he started walking, before I followed I looked at the purse it was very girly certainly not something I would have. All pink with little flowers painted on it was nice for anyone who was in to that kind of stuff but it wasn't my taste. Running to catch up we walked side by side to pay for the basket that was over half my size.

"That'll be £20" the woman behind the checkout told us a small smile on her face. I didn't know her name which was surprising seeing as how small the village was. But I had heard from some of the girls gossiping in school that a new family had moved in. I didn't know much about them but I did know they moved in the same time the people looking for toothless and those other dragons we were yet to see came. "You two had better hurry it's almost time for the curfew to start" I had forgotten about the curfew but being reminded of it I answered as quickly as I could

"Thanks we were just about to go home" I waved bye to the new woman, walking from the shop leaving Arden to carry the basket but since he didn't complain I felt no guilt in doing so.

I walked with him back to my house where I remembered a flaw in bringing him back

"Damn" I chastised myself

"What?" he asked placing down the basket

"My dad's inside. I have to bring down the fish and he's probable still awake" seeing the predicament he thought for a minute before saying

"You're screwed"

"Thanks, that's real helpful" I rolled my eyes at him before telling him to stay making sure I made it look like I was talking to a dog.

I cracked open the door; I felt like I was robbing the house, peeking round the door and thankfully luck was on my side. He had fallen asleep on his armchair snoring louder than humanly possible. I tiptoed through the door, creeping up the stairs trying to quieten my steps as much as I could. Once I reached the top of the stairs instead of walking across the floor I shuffled keeping both feet on the floor constantly so no sound was made. Even though my dad could snore like nothing else whenever I made even the slightest sound he acted like I had my music on full. His ears were like super sensitive only immune to his own noise. I cracked open my door seeing the fish where I had left it stinking up my bed covers

"Probably should have thought through where I was putting the fish it's going to be on my bed for months isn't it" I whispered to myself grabbing the bags which rustled a little, which made me freeze like a deer in headlights. When nothing happened I started moving again.

I practically jumped from happiness as I closed the door to my house I refrained from doing that though I did allow myself a little

dance.

"Someone's happy" I could hear the laughter in his voice that he was trying to suppress failing immensely

"Can you blame me?" I asked placing the bags on the floor. I had only been holding them a few minutes and already they were imbedding themselves in my hands

"I guess I can't" he lifted the bags tipping the contents into the basket hauling it onto his shoulder "come on I think we've left toothless long enough he's probably starving and if he's as smart as I think he is he'll be dying to find out what that tail fin is for" I nodded following closely behind as we set off being careful to not run into any of those strange men looking for toothless and other dragons.

****please read review****

18. Chapter 18

Reaching the cove we ran in not wasting any time both just as eager to try out the newly made fin. As Arden predicted he was sat watching the fin with open curiosity. As we neared him his head turned the fin forgotten, I'm not sure if it was the fish or the fact that he missed us but he came straight over nuzzling us both.

"Hey toothless we've got you a present and it's not the food" I started scratching his face earning me a small purr. The mention of a present that wasn't food made the black dragon even happier to see us. He walked behind us pushing us both forwards towards the fin looks like he figured out that was his present. Leaning into Arden I whispered "I think he'll probably be a little uneasy when I put the fin on so I need you to distract him with the food" nodding he started walking behind toothless who followed him. I clapped to gain his attention motioning to the fin I had picked up "come on Arden is going to get your fish ready while I show you what your present is so be good and sit down for us will you" I tried not to sound patronising but it was a little hard sometimes when I had to deal with them.

Listening to me he sat on the floor allowing me to get behind him and Arden to start laying the fish on the floor but not before acting like someone trying to train a dog by sticking his hand out in front and trying to sound forceful and in charge went 'stay'. I laughed at him silently under my breath as I dropped the fin on the floor by his half tail. Using the belt I was going to use as a support for the fin I dragged his tail over as I was about to fit the buckle his tail swung away from me.

Looking up a scowl on my face I saw that Arden was hand feeding him and with all his attention on feeding him he wasn't aware that he was making toothless move away from me

"Arden stay still" I hissed over to him he looked over smirking before mouthing his apology standing still and allowing me to return to my previous task. I lined the fin back against the tail when it moved again. I let out a breath of frustration looking to see when had caused it. This time Arden was currently on the floor toothless

eating off him I laughed yet again this was going to be a fun night.

"Sarah help please he keeps licking me cos I smell of fish"

"Deal with it yourself I've got a job to do myself" I answered him waiting till he managed to push toothless from him and make it to his feet though he was quite wobbly for a few seconds. Climbing onto his tail so I could hopefully have better luck I tried one final time to get the fin attached. I managed to get it buckled and was about to open the fin to look at my work when toothless jolted forwards jolting me off his tail onto my stomach. Getting on my hands and knees I turned to see Arden was laughing at me now dusting off my shirt I glared at him before realising what he had done. He had thrown the fish slightly so toothless moved to get it making me fall off

"Not funny" I insisted

"Beg to differ" he countered looking irritatingly smug.

"Just for that you don't get to fly" seeing he only had a few fish left I climbed back on his tail while I still had the chance. I had to make sure I had fitted it properly I don't want to hurt him from the rubbing on his injured skin. Pulling out the folding part of his fin I checked to make sure it was all connected,

"Hey Sarah" Arden started sounding a little worried

"Shh" ignoring him I carried on with my checks.

"Sarah will you turn around for a second" he snapped

"Be quiet I'm almostâ€¦ don't I just have to do a few more-AHH!" I cut myself off with a startled cry as I was jerked from where I was sitting almost to the point as I had fallen off his tail. I was thankful I hadn't fallen cos when I looked down I was over the lake; looking back I saw toothless flapping his wings in a determined attempt to get out of this cove. I had both my hands clamping down on his tail ignoring the fin which was the least of my problems at the moment.

I could see he was starting to nose dive the further across we got, looking back to where we were I could hear Arden yelling if I was ok. I didn't want to answer back, far too concerned with my predicament. A flapping sound gained my attention in the mist of my panic looking down I saw the wing had folded up again like it was when we were on the ground. When it fully closed we were going in for a crash landing I acted instinctively and pulled open the fin in a desperate attempt to pull us up from our current destination to a hopefully safer one.

To my amazement it worked like magic. We pulled out of our nose dive and were flying up out of the cove straight as an arrow up into the sky. He tilted his wing to turn and I followed his wings tipping the fin so it lined up with his other wing. We flew around in a big turning circle

"I don't believe it its actually working!" I yelled out to Arden who was still stood where we had left him looking up at us mouth open. I

wanted to land, to boast to him about it working but I had no idea how so I followed his lead till he decided to land. Doing what I hope was an unintentionally sharp turn I was thrown from his tail before I could even scream. I hit the water below skidding momentarily across the water surface before slowing enough to be submerged into the water. I had landed in a shallowish part allowing me to jump in the water cheering my success "yea!"

I swam over to Arden and toothless, who had swam over there faster than me,

"It worked!" I was grinning at them as I rung out my shirt. Arden grabbed my shoulders pulling me into a hug

"Congrats you did good" hugging him back he didn't seem to care that I was getting him soaked. Something nuzzled my side and looking down I saw toothless rubbing his head against my side in what I guessed was a thank you

"You don't have to thank me toothless besides I still have a lot of work to do on it" I gained confused looks from both of them so I elaborated "it may have worked but I had to hold it open so I'm going to try and make something to hold it open and hopefully make it less likely for me to get thrown off, cos honestly if that happened somewhere else I would be seriously hurt" they both nodded their heads

"So are you going to make a kind of saddle or something along those lines?" Arden asked after a moment's thought

"Yea that would be a good idea I could fashion one from an old horses saddle" if I can find a saddle that is" a snort from our side gained our attention. Looking down I laughed at toothless' face "don't be like that we're not making you a pet or anything but if you want to be able to fly again then it's a saddle or nothing" I couldn't help thinking how much like a parent I sounded then and apparently Arden thought so too as he laughed.

"Come on time to go Sarah we have to be back soon you know curfew we're already out too late" to empathise his point he tapped his wrist as though he had a watch on him

"Yea let's go, bye toothless we'll see you tomorrow. Hopefully a bit earlier and I'll start working on that saddle" I promised as we turned to leave a slight wine from behind made us both turn. He had sat down bowing his head looking sad. "What's wrong toothless?" I asked walking over placing my hand on his head. He moved his head quickly biting the end of my still wet shirt tugging it slightly not hard enough to make me fall but enough for me to be jerked

"I don't think he wants you to leave" Arden walked over patting his body as he passed I shook my head

"No that can't be it can it?" I asked looking from him to Arden clearly confused

"Think we should stay longer?" he suggested. I thought over it for a few moments before nodding

"Yea sure why not as long as we can get a bed I'm fine with staying"

as soon as the words left my mouth toothless plodded off going somewhere I couldn't see. A loud creak sounded before a crack followed shortly after. A dragging sound was the next thing we heard and I looked over to him silently asking what was going on. All he could do was shrug as a large thick branch was dragged in front of us, toothless dropping the end he was holding in his teeth sitting by it waiting patiently. Neither of us moved not sure why he brought over a branch. He gestured to the branch then to us. Following his eyes it suddenly dawned on me

"Oh right this is going to be our pillow right for our bed" a gummy smile spread over his face as he nodded

"Thanks toothless" Arden thanked him before he sat on the floor "I'm not particularly tired but I think he wants us to go to sleep" he explained. Sitting down beside him I decided I might as well go to bed as well we would have to wake up early if we were going to get home before either our parents woke up or we were late for school. Resting my head against the branch I closed my eyes shivering slightly as a cold breeze hit me, but the coldness was soon gone as something smooth and warm covered my chest. Opening an eye a fraction I saw toothless had settled himself in between me and Arden one wing covering me the other covering him. Turning onto my side I wrapped an arm around his neck burying my head in between his shoulder and head

"Night" I yawned closing my eyes and allowing myself to fall asleep with the steady beat of toothless' heart making me forget that my bed was about a half an hour walk away.

****please read review****

19. Chapter 19

****sorry for the long wait****

A sharp shake woke me from my sleep; opening one eye a fraction I glared half-heartedly at Arden

"What?" I asked too tired to care that I sounded a little harsh

"Have you looked at the time it's almost nine" I sat up sharp jarring my back slightly, muttering irritated at myself I looked at him

"Really?" I asked rubbing my back

"Yes" he answered holding out a hand to help me up as toothless moved his wing from over my chest "we have two choices run like hell to school and hope we only get detention for a week or we could stay here for the day and pretend we were ill"

"They would never believe that would they?" I asked I had never faked being ill so I was apprehensive about it

"Don't worry I have faked being ill a few times and I've never been caught" he assured me

"Ok then why not but if they find out then I am blaming you completely" holding his hands up he smiled at me

"Fair enough"

"So what do you do when you fake ill?" I asked I didn't know what you were supposed to do

"Nothing really we can do anything and I say you practice flying or you let me have a go" I smiled at what he was trying to do

"No I make the tail fin I get to fly him" I justified why he wasn't having a go but honestly I was just a little paranoid that he would break it. I had worked hard on making it and I know he did as well but still it was my idea.

"I made it too" he argued back, I hadn't planned on him thinking of that

"It was my idea" I started to raise my voice pointing to myself

"If it weren't for me you would have never met him you would have ran away and left him" we had started an argument and it seemed like it would possibly be a long one. I was about to yell back at him when the ground burst and sprayed in our faces small bits of dirt going into my mouth. Spitting out the dirt I looked around when the dust that had risen settled and I spotted toothless sitting facing us. I stared at him stupidly for a few moments before looking away and staring at the ground where a miniature crater had been formed the dirt beneath looking slightly charred. Scowling slightly I looked at the dragon who was trying to look innocent, eyes looking like jade green orbs

"You shot fire at us didn't you?" I accused my voice strangely calm he nodded slowly

"And why did you do that?" Arden spoke before I could, he didn't answer not that he could so I tried to fill it in

"Did you think that if you did that you'd shock us and stop our argument?" He nodded his head reminding me of a child who had been caught stealing a sweet "don't look so guilty toothless you stopped us having a big fight and I guess he can have a little go if he promises not to break it" I looked at him pointedly as I kicked the dirt that had been scattered by the small fire toothless shot, a wide grin spread across his face as he pulled me into a hug. Hugging him back I was slightly surprised by how happy he was.

"Thanks lass" he let go of me much to relief as he had been squeezing me a lot

"No problem I guess, besides you might be able to stay on and actually keep the fin open so he can fly while I change a saddle into a harness for him" from the look in his eyes I knew what he wanted to ask "if he doesn't mind then yes you can fly him now" looking at him toothless nodded swinging his tail forwards

"You know now that I think about it, it doesn't seem as fun as I thought"

"Are you scared? I didn't think you got scared" I taunted him slightly enjoying the fact that I knew he would do the typical thing people like him did

"I'm not scared and I'll prove it" as he marched past me I couldn't keep the smirk off my face as he walked round toothless trying to get him to keep his tail still. Like yesterday he kept moving it but unlike yesterday this wasn't because he was eating but because he was wagging his tail like a dog would because he was happy to be able to go flying again.

I blocked out his annoyed grumbling as he tried to stop the dragon's swishing tail. Instead wandering around a little smiling slightly as I saw him threaten toothless who looked to be getting impatient despite the fact that it was his fault they weren't flying in the first place. Focusing on them I almost laughed at his pleading voice

"Toothless please will you just sit still" surprisingly he stayed still like he was asked allowing Arden to climb onto the tail opening the fin we had forgotten to take off. I was relieved that it hadn't broken during the night. "You know I can't wait for that saddle" he muttered but I still heard him and smirked at his words "Sarah you know we have to train him to fly on a word or something cos I don't know how to fly him. But of course he worked perfectly for you. Talk about favouritism" I couldn't hold back a laugh at that before motioning to toothless to fly off while he was off guard.

A wide gummy smile appeared on the black dragon's face as he spread his wings getting ready to take off. A scream like the one I had made yesterday escaped his lips as toothless flew off beating his wings to gain height as quickly as possible

"Not funny Sarah!" He yelled down to me. I saw his hands grabbing the fin forcing it open, I couldn't stop giggling the entire time he was screaming but after a few more minutes of terrified screams he seemed to get the hand of it, somewhat. Toothless tilted his wing circling the cove, as much as I hated to admit it he was doing better than me, only slightly though.

I don't know how much longer it was till he lost control but it wasn't long after his newest turn was he thrown from him. I thought he was going to land in the lake like I did but instead he was propelled towards me. My eyes widened when he was screaming towards me it occurred to me that he was heading straight for me and would tackle me if I didn't move. As I was about to run I was swiped off my feet landing on top of him and managing to get a small pained sound from him. I sat on him stupidly not moving though I could feel him trying to squirm out from under me.

"Sarah please move you're crushing me" his voice snapped me out of my trance like state and I jumped from him I grabbed his arm pulling him up as toothless swam back over. Seemed he knew how to land properly even without us helping him with the new tail.

"Sorry" I apologised quickly dusting him off he looked annoyed but never said anything. Toothless shook himself off once he was out of the water, I hadn't been paying much attention meaning we were both soaked. I dragged my hand down my face removing the water which smelled like fish. I looked over to him seeing he had caught one when

he had splashed down. Rolling my eyes I shook my head "well done you managed to catch your own food for once" I sounded sarcastic but I was actually proud of him, he was still self-sufficient despite his tail.

"Does anyone know the time?" Arden asked before adding "I don't know why I said that you're the only one I'd be able to understand" I shook my head at him before asking

"Don't you know after all you did tell me it was nearly nine a bit ago?" He smiled slightly before telling me. "You know that yesterday you were thrown into the lake while you were flying?" I nodded "well I should have learned from you and took my phone out of my pocket and now it's completely ruined" to prove his point he pulled his phone out of his pocket the water from the lake dripping from the screen which you could see was flooded. I grimaced trying to look as sympathetic as I could but I just wanted to laugh.

It had never really occurred to me how much more comfortable I was around him, in the past I would have been a stuttering idiot who has humiliating hiccupping fits while trying to speak to him to try and say something that didn't sound hurtful. Now I just wanted to call him the idiot and make jokes about him till he turned red in either anger or embarrassment, preferably both. I scratched toothless' head in a silent thank you to the dragon if it weren't for him I would still be that girl and Arden would still hate me.

"Make fun of me later will you now let's just go to the shop or something." I looked at him worriedly this was my first day off when I didn't deserve it he must have seen it as well "not the shops then, what about yours is your dad in?" I shrugged my shoulders in an I don't know while quietly thanking god for not making me go to the shop. "Let's go see then" he seemed surprisingly happy as he wrung out his shirt, reminding me of myself yesterday.

I scratched toothless' head before scanning the cove, I didn't have a reason to I just wanted to see if I could see what he used to amuse himself when we weren't there. There wasn't anything except a few burnt patches of earth which I could only guess was a makeshift bed.

"Ok let's go to mine, but I am not wasting time. We are working when we get there" I could see he looked annoyed but I didn't really care I just wanted to make something for toothless so he wasn't as bored as he must have been when we weren't here.

"As long as it isn't school work I will do anything you want" he did a good job at hiding the annoyance in his voice as he spoke clapping his hands as he shook his head throwing water in all directions. He patted the dragon's nose before walking to the exit to the cove. "Coming?" He asked looking at me I laughed slightly to myself as I started to follow him to the exit.

****please read review****

20. Chapter 20

I was so nervous as we walked through the woods. I half expected my dad or the teachers from school to pop out from the shadows or the

branches of the trees and drag us to school. At one moment I was so anxious I felt like the police would show up.

He must have noticed my jittery behaviour as he grabbed my hand leading me through the woods; whenever I slowed or looked around out of nerves he would give my hand a reassuring squeeze. It helped more than he could know. We walked in silence but it wasn't the awkward kind but a comfortable one, we didn't need to talk to fill in the silence we could just relax and take in our surroundings.

I felt so content as we walked through a particularly dense section of trees watching the birds in the trees which weren't usually there when we came by.

"What are you looking at?" He asked as he followed my eyes to see what I was.

"Nothing really just the scenery" I answered looking at a small family of birds. He shook his head and by the look on his face I could tell he thought I was being crazy. After a while we arrived at the path that took us to the edge of the village. I felt a little shaky about going in, still convinced that we would be caught as soon as we passed the line of trees. But I never voiced my worry knowing that he would say I was paranoid and I probably was being a little and allowed myself to be led through.

Much to my amazement we weren't grabbed by school teachers and police and anything else my mind had come up with, instead we walked through and not a soul was there, the place looked deserted nothing like it usually did. I could only put it down to being because everyone was at school or work; it made me think that maybe when he faked being ill in the past he would see this and if it made him feel slightly strange as well. I didn't have much time to really think though cos I found myself being dragged away

"Come on then let's get this over with at your place cos I wanna do something fun" I didn't answer instead nodding. "Stop panicking will you it's not that bad everyone at school will think we're ill and as long as we plan properly our parents will be none the wiser" he was trying to reassure me that all would be fine but I knew something bad would happen, something had to. "Lighten up" he shook his head as he continued to drag me; he clearly thought I was being over dramatic.

"Lighten up, you lighten up, I'm light I could float I'm so light" I insisted as I started waving my free hand around in the air to empathise my point which I wasn't too clear on what it was. He clamped his hand over my mouth stopping me from continuing if anything else popped into my head.

"You're panicking stop it nothing is going to happen. I promise" I felt myself calm down considerably when he looked into my eyes as he spoke. Not really sure why I wanted to I pulled him into a quick hug

"Thanks" I smiled slightly to him, so I didn't have to try to explain my sudden action I started to walk again pulling him this time.

I dragged him all the way to my house not letting him talk; I was so preoccupied with not letting him talk that I had completely forgotten

that my dad could be home. It wasn't till he pulled me back into him by a sharp tug that I looked at him and let him talk

"Ok you can act as weird as you want cos you're panicking slightly right now but have you even checked to see if he is in or not?" I froze as it dawned on me I could have barged in there Arden being dragged behind and my dad could be there and more often than not when I'm at school Gobber's there too.

"Look in that window will you" I pointed to one that was on the side of the house as he tried to walk away he stopped half way looking back at me, he rose an eye brow expectantly. "What?" I asked oblivious he looked down then back up, following his eyes I saw I was still holding his hand. Retracting my hand I held it to my chest and from the heat in my face I knew I was blushing badly. He just shook his head turning to follow out the job I had given him.

I tapped my foot as I waited for him; I wasn't the most patient person today and it was clear as I tapped out a tune to try to keep myself entertained. When he came back a smile was on his face

"The lights are off" he explained and it took a few seconds for me to understand why that was good

"That could mean he slept in which doesn't sound like him or he's out" I crossed my fingers that it was the latter. I motioned for him not to move as I tried the door; I found it was locked which gave me hope that I was right and he was out. Checking my pockets I found no keys sighing in annoyance I knew I would have to play robber again. "Are any of the windows open?" I asked I wanted to get something from my house I didn't know what it was but I knew I'd know once I saw it

"All the bottom windows are locked but I did see and open one on the second floor" I looked at him gobsmacked

"Are you serious?" I asked. He smirked before answering

"No you idiot I think the one you wanted me to look through was open" scowling at him I punched his upper arm before storming past him to test the window. I could hear him laugh as he followed me but I ignored him.

The window was closed but I didn't think it was locked. Grabbing the window I tried to force it open only succeeding with opening it a fraction. Letting out an annoyed growl type noise I looked at Arden expectantly.

"Fine I'll help you" he sighed like I had just asked him to do an impossible task. Placing his hands on the window he too pushed and even with us both pushing it didn't move an inch just squeaked slightly "what is wrong with your window?" He asked as he stopped trying to force it open

"There's nothing wrong with the window" I stated

"Clearly which is why it's still closed and all we've managed to do is make a gap big enough for a mouse and it sounds like one too"

"Stop picking on the window" I stated I didn't really care I just wanted to annoy him, he shook his head apparently guessing what I was doing

"You're thin try to squeeze through" he motioned for me to move and climb through with the window

"You're being insane, I may be thin-ish but I can't fit through that" I pointed at the window as though that would empathise my point

"Just try I want to go do something fun and I can't do that if you don't even try" looking at him with an exasperated sigh I tried to squeeze through. I could barely get my foot through let alone the rest of me. As though trying to help he pushed on my back, he did help a little and I felt myself drop further and further through the window. As I was being forced I heard a creak and the window gave way swinging open.

From the force of him pushing me I practically flew through the window, grabbing his hand in a futile attempt at stopping myself I felt him come away from the floor and fly through the window with me. We landed in a heap on the floor

"Ow" I muttered rubbing my head which I had banged on the floor

"Mind getting up" I heard something say, looking around slightly bemused I couldn't see where the noise came from. Shrugging my shoulders I played it down to my mind making voices until I felt a tap on my side. Looking down I saw who I was sitting on; jumping up I pulled him up with me

"Sorry completely forgot you were there" I admitted he let out a half sigh half laugh as he ruffled his hair setting it back in place.

"I guess that makes it fine?" He asked practically seeing the sarcasm lacing his voice. I rolled my eyes not wanted to have an argument "mind telling me what we're looking for?"

I shrugged "I'm not sure but I was thinking a toy of some sort. Maybe something we can make a toy out of" I wasn't really sure what I wanted but I knew I wanted something to stop him being bored.

"A toy? I got sat on to find a toy?" He asked incredulously smiling slightly I saw him sigh over dramatically "fine. Let's get this over with"

****please read review****

21. Chapter 21

We spent a long time looking for anything that could double as a toy I had thought of old stuffed animals I had not played with since I was six but quickly decided against that when I remembered he was a dragon not a puppy. I doubted he would want to play with my peppa pig doll.

"You know I had a cat when I was younger" I looked from the back of

the couch where I had spent the last ten minutes looking for anything.

"Oh and that's important why?" I asked

"Well she liked chasing things do you think toothless would like to do that too?" I thought about it for a second before shrugging

"I have no idea and even if he did I don't have a piece of string long enough for a dragon to chase"

"I don't mean string. We had this laser pointer that she loved and I think it may be somewhere in my house still. We could go there and try to find it." Standing up properly I walked out from the back of the couch

"What if he doesn't like to chase things?" I asked

"Doesn't really matter if he does we can just cross it off the list of possible toys for him and move on. Either way we'll have a better idea of what he likes and what he doesn't" Taking a moment to think it through I nodded

"Ok why not, we'll go there in a few minutes and after I promise we can do something you deem as fun" with my promise he started to look around again.

"If we are going to look shouldn't we look everywhere? In other words not just downstairs, but also upstairs where your toys may be. For example your room." I smiled slightly at him before agreeing and leading the way to my bedroom, where he would discover the extent of my dad's insane obsession with overcompensating for his absence using toys.

"What the hell?" He asked as I opened the dresser I had renamed toy prison.

"Yea I know it's bad. Worse than I remember it actually"

"This is what I would expect a five year old to have not an eleven year old" he told me sounding a mixture of shocked and impressed. "Why don't you just throw them out haven't you had them for years?"

"Well yes I have had a lot of them for years but most of them I got a few weeks before I met toothless and you and I became friends. Plus I can't throw them out or my dad would be upset and some of them were from my mum" I explained before quickly changing the subject before I started to cry from remembering my mum "so any of these seem right for a dragon?" I had tried to mask the sadness in my voice but even I could tell I had failed

"I'm guessing that he wouldn't love them. Probably burn them." He answered not asking why I was upset after probably guessing what it was.

"Yea you're probably right. Well come on let's go to yours" I tried to sound more upbeat than I had a moment ago and I had done so somewhat.

"Come on then I'll lead the way" walking to the door of my room I watched him leave, sliding the drawer closed slowly so I didn't trap a stuffed foot I followed him out, smiling slightly to myself as I followed.

"Just so you know there's a fifty, fifty chance my mum is home" he mentioned as we arrived at the top of his road. Placing my hand on his shoulder I turned him

"What? Why didn't you say before we left?!" I asked somewhat panicked

"I thought you would panic" he admitted

"Well obviously"

He laughed at me "relax. If she is home then we can go do something fun instead" as he was about to start walking I stopped him with a sudden thought

"If she's home and the school phone to ask where you are and if you're ill then she will know you skipped school and you'll be grounded forever" looking at me I could tell he knew I was right and it was worrying him

"I need to see if my mum's home" as he ran I also added

"She might think you were kidnapped as well"

"Why would she think that?" He yelled back but once he had he stopped realising that if someone came out to see why there was yelling we would get caught

"Because you didn't go home last night" I explained

"Oh right forgot about that" he admitted as he walked towards his house instead of running so I could catch up.

"Well this'll be fun" I muttered to myself

"What? Why?"

"Because my dad might think I was kidnapped and your mum might. So it'll be fun to see who gets the worst punishment you or me I guess you" he let out a sigh running his hand through his hair

"We shouldn't have let that dragon keep us" I heard him grumble looking at him I saw he was only joking

"You know you could never say no to him"

"Yea you're probably right" we were outside his house but the curtains were closed not letting us sneak a peek in and see if she was home. I let out a small sigh as we crept closer to the window making sure to keep quiet in case she was there; if we were silent we had a better chance of her not hearing us. I knew she didn't like me but I had no idea why, I guessed it was because no one really liked me here well except for Arden, now.

As I walked towards the window I saw we had both unconsciously

crouched down, I smirked as it occurred to me that we must look like we were robbing the place. Reaching the front door he leant against the wood; he looked a little stupid but I guessed he was trying to see if he could hear anything.

"I don't hear her in there" he whispered as he pushed down the handle gently only to find it sticking when he pushed against the door. "This is a good sign, she's out" he added as he stood up fishing around in his pocket "I think I have a key on me" he whispered still not convinced that she was out. Not wanting to talk too loud to annoy him because he was still being cautious I nodded at him waiting for him to find the allusive key.

Pulling out the silver key he looked at me a smile on his face "found it" slipping the key into the lock he turned it slowly, it was supposed to make less of a sound but it ended up looking like he was trying to pick the lock. I didn't want to say anything so I stood back till he swung open the door still crouched down so he was almost sitting on the floor.

"Will you stand up?" I finally asked "you look like a mental patient" looking up from where he had been staring he smiled slightly before pushing himself up.

"Ow, fine I'll stand but you just took all the fun out of it" rolling my eyes I followed him in

"I don't think she's here. Maybe she's at the police?" I joked still stuck on the whole our parents think we've been kidnapped

"Maybe" he answered making me freeze

"You really think that could happen?" I asked as I grabbed his shoulder turning him around so he had to look at me, he smirked at me shrugging his shoulders before walking off again.

"Stop taking so long will you I wanna do something fun and the only way I can do that is if I get that laser pointer" he seemed convinced now that she was out so he spoke in a normal tone. Sulking slightly I wandered in looking for the light switch, it wasn't very dark but I didn't want to risk us being seen if we opened the curtains to let in the morning light.

Spotting the small switch I flicked it on light filling the room faster than I could blink. "Ow" he grumbled as I looked over at him silently asking what was wrong "I was looking up when you tuned it on I think I'm going blind" he whined as he rubbed his eyes I was going to taunt him for being so overdramatic but I found I couldn't, I almost wanted to comfort him even though nothing was wrong. I shook my head at how stupid I sounded and went over to him patting his back in a slow sarcastic way so I could keep what little pride I had and still do what I wanted. "Thanks Sarah, come on let's go upstairs to find the laser I think it's in a bag somewhere in my room, there or my mums but if it is there be careful she hates people being in her room and she's like a hawk when it comes to people being in her room. I swear she found out I went in there this one time because I left a dip in a pillow." I smirked at him as I followed him to his room.

I felt slightly awkward but I ignored that feeling I was only here for toothless. As I was led into his room I made sure not to look

around and go through his things. I really wanted to but I couldn't it was his room and I knew I would be upset if I saw him shifting through my things. Dropping to the floor he slipped half under the bed. I was going to ask him what he was doing till I heard things moving around; that was when I realised he must have stuffed the laser under the bed, if he still had it that is. After a few minutes of nothing but me tapping my foot impatiently I heard what sounded like an ah, before he came back out a bag in his hand.

"That's not a laser but a bag" I stated as though he was insane

"I know that inside" he pointed to the plastic bag dropping it onto the bed then sitting next to it. "I remember my mum said that we'd get another cat when ours died so I kept all the toys in a bag and hid them under my bed. We never did get another but still I haven't gotten around to throwing anything out. Good luck ain't it?" Ripping the plastic to get to the toys instead of undoing the knot he scattered them across the floor as he dug around for the laser.

I have no idea how long I waited for him to find the laser but I knew I was bored. "Found it" he shook me so I would look at him. He was holding a small silver tube a tiny black button on the side. Pressing it down he shone the red light in my eyes.

"Arden" I complained as I blocked my eyes from the horrid light.

"What?" He asked innocently as he took it from my eyes, I could hear him standing up from the bed so I lowered my hand from shielding my eyes. "Come on let's go to toothless try this out then we can do something fun" walking past me I added

"We could fly him"

"Not a chance that was terrifying I am never going on that dragon again, you can but you'll be insane to do so"

I smirked at him muttering "baby" under my breath. Thankfully he didn't hear me.

****please read review****

22. Chapter 22

Once we left the house I had nagged him to lock the door and even after insisting he had we were forced to walk all the way back to the house to double check only to discover he hadn't really locked it.

"I said I was sorry" Arden repeated for what must have been the hundredth time.

"I know but I'm still annoyed, you called me paranoid and as it turned out I was right to be" I retorted my arms crossed over my chest. I was only being more stubborn than usual because I was bored and I wanted to annoy him, he deserved it as well for calling me paranoid. I had even proved that I had every right to be.

"How many more times do I have to tell you I'm sorry?" He asked as he

ran forwards to walk in step with me

"I'll let you know when you get there" I answered smirking on the inside as he groaned in annoyance

"Girls" he muttered making me laugh at him, but only quietly. Otherwise he would think I had forgiven him, which I had I was never actually angry.

After a few minutes of walking we made it back to the border of the woods. I stared at them remembering that I had had quite a few falls in there most of them occurring from collisions with Arden. I hated when that had happened I always felt so humiliated when I would look up into his big eyes full of concern; like a small child when he would hold out a hand to me to pull me up. Though they weren't the only times I had fell of course, I was quite clumsy I never managed to make it more than a week without falling flat on my face. It had even turned into a game at one point, if I could guess when I would fall I would indulge myself in something I loved though I couldn't fall purposefully.

"You ok you've been out of it for some time?" I shook my head at the unexpected voice and turned to the source of the sound, raising a brow I silently asked what he had asked of me. "You've been daydreaming for so long" he told me as we walked into the woods, we had been stood still while I was stuck in my head, I blinked at him a few times before talking

"Sorry I was just thinking about something. But it's not important" I instantly regretted saying that because he did what every normal human does

"What was it?" Letting out a sigh I asked myself how stupid I could be. Seemed I could be very. Deciding to try to sidestep the question I tried to be vague

"I was thinking about the woods and us" I inwardly cringed at how stupid that was; looking over at him I could see his face was bright red and he looked a little bemused. In order to keep this from staying on me; and me putting my foot in my mouth again I laughed at him as his face looked like he had awful sunburn.

"Oh shut up will you" he tried to sound angry at me but I could tell he was just embarrassed and was trying to do what I was and keep this off himself, but as I knew what he was trying to do, I didn't fall for it and kept on laughing.

Once we finally made it to the cove I looked over at him, he had been in a huff for the past ten minutes refusing to look me in the eye and having his arms crossed over his chest indignant. "Cheer up will you we're there" I tried to gain his attention though he pretended I wasn't there. I had to think of a way to get him to look at me so I clicked the little button on the light in my hand. It had originally been in his pocket but I had taken it from him a few minutes before and because he wasn't going to talk to me he didn't say anything to stop me from taking it. Sometimes I loved a man's foolish pride. Clicking the button again I shone it in his eyes for a second before turning it off, he glared at me for a second before going back to ignoring me.

I rolled my eyes at how stubborn he was and shone it in his eyes again, I was determined to get him to talk to me even if it was only a grumbled whine. This time though he just closed his eyes shaking his head, seemed he knew what I was trying to do. Damn it. I kept shining it in his eyes every couple of seconds and after a while I could see it was starting to work. He looked very annoyed at me before finally saying, well snapping

"Will you stop that? You're being mean to me today and don't blame it on skipping school cos this isn't the first time we have and I don't believe this is the first time you faked being ill" I wished I had left him to sulk. Scowling at him I turned away from him sticking my head into the air to show I was upset. I could almost feel his smirk in the back of my head as I started to walk away from him. I could have sworn I heard a laugh to accompany that as well.

Walking into the cove I refused to look at him as I walked over to the sleeping dragon who was curled up on a patch of scorched earth. Standing over him I watched as he breathed softly, eyes closed and lip twitching showing that he was dreaming. I smiled at him as he flicked his tail on the ground. Crouching down in front of him I reached out and stroked his head making him crack open one of his own eyes, he looked up at me and seemed only slightly irritated. He blinked a little and opened his eyes fully, I smiled down at him.

"We have a present for you" I whispered seeing his ears perk slightly in curiosity. Standing up I motioned for him to follow, pushing himself up he stretched out looking like an oversized cat. I smirked at him as he looked over at Arden, he tilted his head in confusion as he stood a few feet back arms crossed over his chest. I rolled my eyes and answered with a simple word "boys" he seemed to understand, much to my amazement, and nodded his head plodding lazily over to the stubborn boy. He seemed a little logged with sleep. I watched as he looked down on the dragon, staring at him a little irritated but we could both tell the irritation was directed at me not him.

"Yes toothless?" He asked as he tried to stop showing his irritation as clearly as he was. Not saying anything the dragon walked around him using his large head to push the boy, moving him closer to me. With us only a few feet apart I couldn't help looking him in the eye while he glared back at me. It seemed a little stupid him being so mad over me not telling him one simple thing. I watched silently as they exchanged a few glances with toothless, he seemed to be fighting the dragon in a battle of wills. Whoever cracked first under the pressure that was being dealt the battle of will. "You know this is getting tedious, I never thought I would see this when I woke up." I could hardly keep a straight face as he spoke

"I know what you mean I'm sorry if I upset you though if I'm honest I have no idea as to what I had done but whatever I have done I am sorry" I looked across at him waiting to see if I could get a response. After a few minutes I had been hoping for what would have been a mythical dream in the past, now I saw it as more of a formality for him to answer me as he had kept me waiting he sighed before turning from toothless and coming over to me.

"That's fine, I guess, but really I was just being a baby. So you didn't want to tell me one thing. If I'm honest with you the only reason I was so upset about you not answering me was because I

thought that maybe that nothing was really another boy coming to the woods with you" he was going to stop there but I pressed him for more by raising a brow, I wanted to hear more from him, to make it my mythical dream "I was a little jealous" and there it was. I looked at him with a smirk on my face. He scowled slightly at me as he pushed my shoulder turning away "don't look so smug will you, I only said a little" I would have retorted if it wasn't for my wanting to move onto toothless. I was impatient to know if he would like it, he probably wouldn't but I just had to know.

Showing him the small laser I watched amused as he neared me looking at the small case tilting his head in curiosity. I smiled at him as he nudged it with his nose moving back quickly as it made a slight noise. I would have laughed but I wanted to keep as quiet as I could so he would try again. It took a few moments for him to try again but when he did it seemed very promising. He sniffed at the casing and didn't jump back like he had before when it made another noise, getting a little impatient I decided to rush things a little and shine the light just in front of him, stationary so he wouldn't be too freaked out. Clicking the tiny button I watched as toothless' face didn't stray from my face. Sighing internally I saw I would have to persuade him a little.

"Toothless? What's that on the floor?" I asked motioning towards the small beam of light, his eyes moved from me to the floor obviously curious, his ears perked as he saw the ray of light and after a moment he pounced, reminding me awfully of a cat. He dived on the light clasp his paws over the light though, obviously, it didn't capture the ray, he looked perplexed by this and tried to recapture it with his bottom paw, stacking them one above the other. Shaking my head slightly at him I moved the light away from his paws back to the ground, looking from his paws he seemed a little stunned before he jumped back up, crouching down, ready to pounce again. Seemed he did like the toy, I could have a little fun before he wanted his turn. I just hoped I could play with him for more than a little while.

****please read review****

23. Chapter 23

I hadn't been keeping the time on how long I was playing with him, but it barely seemed more than a few minutes before Arden started to whine that I was hogging the toy and that I never let him do things he wanted. It may have been me but I just wanted to play for a little while longer. I knew I couldn't though if it was him using the toy and me bored then I'd become a bit of a hypocrite if I told him to let me have go and not let him now. So despite really not wanting to, I brought him down from the tree he was climbing to chase the light and stopped it before Arden and throwing him the toy.

I could see he saw how much I hated to do that and instead of being polite he did something I'd never thought I would see, he stuck his tongue out at me. I scowled at him suddenly wishing I had been a hypocrite and left him to sulk. Now I was the one sulking with him playing with the dragon. I watched as he made him chase the beam across the ground he kept attempting to pounce on the ray but it was always just out of his reach. He didn't seem to get bored with the constant chase it made him seem a little simple despite the fact that

I knew he was very intelligent.

I was through with sulking now and motioned for him to move the light to the lake, he smirked as he understood what I meant and moved the beam of light over to the liquid surface. Pausing for a second he allowed toothless to get as close as he liked and just as the dragon was pouncing he moved the light to the centre of the lake. Toothless landed short, obviously, and scowled at the ground before scanning the area for where it could have gone. His eyes froze on the water and a smirk came on his face showing all his teeth which had come out some time during the chase.

Crouching back down he sprang from his spot, his claws out as he prepared to capture the light. He seemed oblivious to the lack of solid surface beneath him. As soon as he landed the water dispersed and the plan we had formulated backfired as the water made a b-line straight for us soaking us to the bone. My scowl was now back full force, I glared at the dragon who was looking perplexed as he swam around the lake looking for the light, though that was now gone as we were soaked and not really bothered with having an oversized cat chasing light.

I shook my head, the water dropping from my hair flying off and I felt slightly better when they splattered against Arden, though he didn't seem quite as happy about that. I looked over to toothless who was still intent on finding that light; it amazed me on how stupid he was. It was a little beam of light from a laser pointer, made for cats. "I wanna go home" he complained as he wrung out his shirt, I nodded at him letting out an agreeing noise. I was definitely not going to fake ill again, if this was what I had to expect I would take my chances at school with Sally and Ruffnut. As I turned from toothless I walked over to Arden.

"Can you promise me something?" I asked as I too started to wring my shirt.

"Yea what is it?" He asked me taking his eyes off the puddle that was forming below him, I waited till he met me in the eye

"Promise we'll never have to fake ill again, this is far too stressful for me, if you ever want to skip school again, it's either near the end of school or on your own" he laughed slightly at me.

"Yea ok then Sarah, I promise that we won't fake ill again" I hid the smile that was threatening to break out as it registered to me that he had said that we wouldn't fake ill again instead of saying he would go on his own. Not really sure why I did what I did, I pulled him into what was supposed to be a quick hug. I wrapped my hands around his neck and as I was about to pull back and apologise for being so stupid I felt him start to hug me back. I was shocked to say the least but I didn't say anything, whether that was from shock I wasn't sure but I just remained quiet till he broke the unplanned hug.

Arden's POV

I don't know what was going through my mind when she hugged me but I do know that I hugged her back. I hadn't even realised I was hugging her till I went to tell her to let go and realised I was the one

keeping her there. I tried not to stiffen at the knowledge so I didn't make her worry but I had no idea what I should do. Do I break the hug? Wait for her too? This was very confusing so I decide to wait it out till she breaks the hug, but that could take a while.

It seemed like forever before she started to ease out of the hug and I tried to not seem too relived once we were separated. It was more from embarrassment than anything, it wasn't that I didn't want to hug her, wait that doesn't sound right. I just don't want her to get any ideas, like me kissing her didn't form any.

"Uh sorry" I tried though it was her who started the hug I felt I should apologise, I just wish it didn't sound as awkward to her as it did to me,

"No uh I'm sorry" seemed I had failed she sounded just as awkward. I rubbed the back of my head not sure what to do, I turned back to the lake expecting to see the dragon swimming in circles looking for the light but he was gone. I squinted slightly thinking I had simply overlooked the dragon. It hadn't really registered with me that I couldn't overlook a massive black flying creature. At least I didn't think I could.

As I strained my eyes to look at the water thinking he might have gone under I felt something on my back. At first I ignored it thinking my mind was playing tricks on me but I was nudged harder pushing me forwards and making me yelp a little in surprise. Turning I saw that toothless had gone behind me. How a thing that big could move silently was beyond me. I scowled down at the soaking wet dragon, water dropping from his ears, he sat down staring up at me. I looked at him confused before turning back to Sarah.

"What is wrong with him?" I asked her hoping she could shed some light on it for me.

"I think he wants to get a hug" she answered making me shift my scowl to her. It wasn't the time for jokes, I was far too wet and cold to find anything funny. "Oh come on don't be so grumpy, I'm not exactly pleased with this myself, my clothes were barely dry from the last time he soaked us but you being mardy isn't going to help any"

"Since when did you become a counsellor?" I asked though I couldn't keep a smile off my face, how a little comment like that could cheer me up was lost on me.

"I'm not one but that isn't the point, come on help me persuade him to let me have another fly" I noted how quickly she changed the topic but I didn't dwell on it instead agreeing. It would be easier to let her do what she wanted; besides I would be happy to let her fly on him as long as I didn't have too.

****please read review****

24. Chapter 24

Before we started to persuade a dragon to let her fly she insisted that we turn it into a bit of a game, I thought that would be fine at first but it turned out she wanted to become spies in a way, she

wanted to sneak up on him and make him fly from shock. I wasn't sure why she wanted to do that but as it turned out I didn't even have to ask, she told me as we hid behind a dead tree. One that was living yesterday. She told me that she wanted to get better at staying on his tail and the best way to do that was to take things to the extreme. Her words. I found it a little bizarre but didn't object to her suggestion.

I was to keep his attention while she snuck up on him. Maybe this could turn out to be fun? I started over to him noting that I was a little redundant; he had his back to us drinking from the lake. She seemed to be taking it very seriously creeping over to him, bent over as she tiptoed. I smiled over to her; I can't believe I didn't used to like her.

While he was drinking from the lake I dropped down beside him, not the best spot as I would most likely get kicked into the water. He looked up at me nodding his head and eyeing me a little suspiciously.

"Hi" I greeted lifting my hand from my shin and waving it slightly, he nodded again before going back to ignoring me. I felt extremely awkward just sitting there watching him but didn't say anything just watching as she crept closer to him, I smirked at how serious she was being and I couldn't stop staring at her. How this was fine with me confused me greatly, to anyone else this would have been extremely weird.

Seemed she was beginning to rub off on me. I used to think she was a bit of a freak and when we were children I used to avoid her at all costs because I thought she had a problem and that I would catch it off her. Now it seemed I had caught it off her, and I didn't care. I was far too happy to care, seeing the world how she sees it makes me wish I had become like her a long time ago. She was carefree, most of the time, at school and from what I could see at home she wasn't carefree. I couldn't blame her for that though. She had had a hard time at school, which as much as I now hate to admit I did contribute to that.

I wasn't very kind to her over the years, and I did push the other kids a little to pick on her all the more. That guilt hadn't left me since we became friends. While I was in thought I felt something smack me in the face, without a chance to stop myself and stunned from shock of the unexpected hit I was thrown backwards, my already wet shirt and hair being re-soaked in the freezing water of the lake. The sun hadn't been heating it very much; it wasn't as strong as it usually was this time of year.

It took me a moment to push myself out of the water and rest on my hands looking up at the sky I knew what I would see; an insane girl flailing about on a black dragon's tail. I stared at them for a moment before a thought hit me. If I could see them does that mean others could too? If that was true then those people would be able to find him. Pushing myself to my feet I shook my head, the excess water flying away leaving it, still soaked but now it wasn't pouring off of my head. I took as deep a breath as I could; preparing myself to yell at her on the now somewhat calmer dragon.

"Sarah! I can see you! Get back down here, you absolute idiot!" I could see her turn to me but it seemed as though I wasn't loud enough

as all she did was wave down at me. I ran my hands through my head and was on the verge of ripping it out. "Sarah! Come here! Now!" This time I pointed to the ground motioning for her to come down and trying to make it as clear as I possibly could. Finally after another turn on the tail she started to land aiming for the other side of the lake. Why had she done that? We never went to that side, I don't know why we never did but we just didn't. It was always avoided and I don't know about her but to me it was always toothless' little home, the place he could go if we weren't there and he wanted to be able to lie in the full gaze of the sun, I had only seen him lie like that once before, I think, and he looks like a cat. More than usual. I saw her grin sheepishly and give him what looked like an apology apparently she too had noticed just how stupid her plan was.

"So what is wrong with you? I was getting the hang of it. Look I didn't get thrown in to the water this time" she boasted as I started to run over to her, I would have to choose on whether or not I should be blunt.

"You're an idiot" I told her once we were face to face, I wasn't going to be vague, she was.

"What do you mean?" She asked aghast.

"You are an idiot" I stated again, drawing out the word, "I could see you" I motioned with my hand to show this.

"Yes I know I waved down to you" I closed my eyes taking a breath trying to remind myself that she wouldn't know

"If I could see you why not everyone else?" That made her pause looking over me like I was playing a cruel trick on her. I shook my head at her slowly, "I'm not playing with you, what reason would I have?" Her face changed and she looked almost mad, at me? I wasn't sure.

"That can't be right, if that is then those people, the ones who know about toothless could have seen me" she was mad at herself, she had no reason to be but I saw why.

"Yes I know that's why I called you back down, waving to me." I laughed a little at the last part which I added for myself. "We need to find a way for you to be able to hide, if we came up with something that could help you hold on to him better you could go up higher, and maybe after a little practice you could go above the clouds"

"That could work but how'd we do that? I could probably work something out but it'd be really hard. And how would we practice?" That last part I had an answer ready for

"We could practice at night." The rest I had no idea, but I'd leave it up to her to make something for him so she could ride him. She'd work something out, I knew she would she was smart, besides it was her who was going to ride him not me.

"I guess we could practice at night, that'd even help with the control, making it harder to fly him I could get better balance and control over his tail, but in the day at first" I nodded at the last part, she would have to do that, but we would have to find a safe

place to take him, and we'd have to make it more possible for him to use his tail without shouts being sent to him. I could practically hear her shouting, left, left, right.

"I agree, we'll go looking for a better place later, then maybe after school, we go home, show that we haven't run away then I'll beg to come over, say it's about school work and we can figure it out then" she laughed at me and I intern scowled at her "what?" I asked completely confused

"You seriously think she'll let you go out, you're grounded aren't you?" I silently cursed to myself, I had forgotten about that, I had been having so much fun with her that I had forgotten about my grounding for the skipping of school when we were just becoming friends. "You forgot didn't you?" She asked slyly, she already knew the answer. She was just making me say it.

"Maybe" I relented giving her a none too serious glare.

"Knew it, don't worry though I'm sure you'll be able to talk your way around it" I smiled slightly at her confidence and I knew it wasn't false you could tell when she was lying, she had a few tells. I turned around to see where toothless was, he was quieter than usual, he was drinking from the lake looking at the fish swimming underneath the surface. I wondered if he was hungry, we would have to get him some food. That could be something to waste a little time. There wasn't much to do and I now wanted time to quicken so school would be over faster, that hadn't happened the last time I had skipped an entire day of school. She must have been rubbing off on me more that I was aware of.

"Come on I think we'd better get him some food" I suggested.

"Are you insane? Why would you suggest that now?! I can barely be here I'm still paranoid about getting caught and now I know that they could see me in the air, why would I venture back into the village?" She asked barely stopping herself from yelling and truth be told I had forgotten that she was so bad. I was amazed by that, why, how had I forgotten? Why had I suggested something, why had I told her about being visible? She'd be so much worse now. I placed my hands on her shoulders and gave her one sharp shake. "Ow" she complained but I wasn't bothered by that, I was just glad she wasn't still having a mild panic attack. I placed my hand over her mouth to stop her from talking and instead answered with what I hoped was something reassuring.

"If anything happens, and even though I'm sure nothing will, I will take the blame, I'll say I grabbed you and forced you to come with me" that had sounded a lot better in my head, now it seemed a little stupid.

"What lie would you tell them so they'd believe you forced me to come, the entire village knows, well knew, you pretty much hated me and they all do too." I felt a little sad at the admission at the end of her sentence, the first part wasn't too much of a concern I was always a good improviser. But the second part meant that she believed everyone hated her, I never saw it like that.

But to tell the truth I never really paid that much attention to her or her problems. I had my own problems that had greater importance to

me. It didn't sound that good but it was before me and her became friends. I didn't care for her back then, I almost hated her. Did she think that I used too? I hoped she didn't I had never liked her in the past but I never hated her. I thought she was quirky. She always managed to make me laugh no matter what kind of day I had had, I used to seek her out on bad days to talk to her and watch her have a hiccupping fit. It made me smile. She would embarrass herself immensely and blush till she resembled a tomato.

"Doesn't matter just come on, I'll look after you" I grabbed her hand and waved a quick goodbye to the dragon. "We'll see you soon toothless, we're just going to get something" I called back to him not bothering to turn around to talk. If I did she'd just start to complain about me not having a worked out plan. "Bye toothless we'll see you with some nice fish just for you." I smirked at the emphasis on you. She obviously didn't wish to taste that food again. I didn't either.

****please read review****

25. Chapter 25

"Can we go back, I don't think he'll want to eat today" I sighed at hearing her thousandth excuse as to why we shouldn't go back to the village.

"It'll be fine, stop panicking, I told you I'd look after you and I will, honestly Sarah you panic too much" I chastised as I shook my head at her

"Panic too much? At least I know when to panic" she retorted and I span round to look her in the eye.

"Look, you'll be fine, tell me one actual reason for you to go back to the cove and I might consider it" I saw her pause at that, I had been thinking of that question for a while. I saw a look of realisation

"I know, where's that basket, I can go get it and you can go buy him food" it was my turn to pause now, I had no idea where it had gone

"Alright then, go get it, I'll go buy the food" she gave me a quick squeeze before running off, I stood slightly shocked. She was a lot less shy than she used to be. I tried to take my mind off her and move it to something more pressing. Did I have any money? I'd have to go and fetch some from home. Unless I shoplifted. I couldn't do that though could I? I didn't see any problem with it myself but Sarah would, I knew her quite well now and I knew that she'd have a problem with me stealing. If she never found out I could steal a few things, I could try to take a few things and not tell her. With my decision made I started to trek through the woods, towards the village and away from toothless.

I wandered through the forest with only mild knowledge of where I was going, I travelled through the woods often but I never paid too much attention to where I was going it was more for the exploration not for remembering. If I ever found anything interesting I would try to remember where I was going but other than that it was just mindless

wandering. I ran a hand through my hair ruffling it slightly to let it settle in a more comfortable position. There wasn't much wind today, just enough to blow the leaves a little to form a small rustling sound.

I smiled at the peaceful sound, noting that I wouldn't have been able to enjoy this if Sarah was still with me. I liked her but she did panic quite quickly. I wondered if those people who knew about toothless had seen her, if they had then that'd be more than bad. They had managed to catch him, injure him to the point where he couldn't fly without help; they obviously had the means to kill him if they could do that. We would have to find a way to let him fly on his own, but that was much easier said than done, as I am never flying on him again and she had a strange mind.

I have no doubt that she will go way too far with an idea to make him independent again. She was quite predictable like that. I had still to decide if that was a good thing or not. I knew one thing for sure though, whatever she thought up it would be genius. She was a smart girl. I tried to take my mind off of her for a moment, it was harder than I thought, I went to my mum for a few minutes. She would kill me when I got home, if she hadn't already called the police to notify a missing child. I could imagine her back at home getting angrier by the second. A few weeks grounding would be the luckiest thing I could get right now, I'd most likely get my room stripped of everything but a mattress.

Then I had to think of my friends, what would they think? They would find out who I was skipping with, I wouldn't tell them but they'd find out eventually, thanks to the chain of mum that travelled through every house. They would probably go mental on me, skipping school all day with Sarah Haddock. And then there was the one thing I was actually scared about, Sally, I wasn't scared for myself. I was for Sarah. Sally pretty much hated her, I never knew why but she did. If she found out about our friendship then she'd lash out at Sarah. I didn't want her to get hurt; and if Ruffnut was told then things would be even worse for her.

I would have to beg Tuff to keep it secret for his sister and her friend. I knew I had a bit of control over Sally because she was a smitten kid but I wouldn't be able to have so much control over her to keep her off Sarah if she found out about our friendship. Oh god what if it slipped that I kissed her. I shook my head quickly, that wouldn't happen, no one knew of that. I was on the verge of hitting myself to get the worrying thoughts out of my head; I did manage to stop myself and substituted that for biting my lip. Now wasn't the time for that, I had to go buy a dragon some lunch. If my friends knew what I was doing they'd think I'd lost my mind. I was beginning to think I had myself.

I let out a breath and started running, if I was going to shoplift I had to run fast, if Sarah came back before I had I would have to go home and find some money. In other words I would have to steal some from my mum. She had a small little stash she thought I didn't know about, I did though, it was in the back of her room under a lamp. She had thought she was being smart by hiding it in the fake bottom of a lamp but I found it. It was quite obvious actually, she had used so much tape the lamp was unstable.

It must have taken me no less than fifteen minutes before I managed

to get anywhere close to my house, and if it hadn't been for the stitch in my side practically murdering me I would have kept going. I dropped to the floor leaning against the brick wall behind me. I grabbed my side and turned to lay back onto the pavement, I pulled my knee up to my chest in an attempt to try to relieve myself of the stitch. I didn't know if it actually worked but the kids in the football team swore by it. I felt a little silly laying on the floor holding my leg but I was willing to try anything. A few seconds later, much to my surprise, the stitch started to ease and I felt I could stand back up and carry back on to my house I dusted off my clothes and started to walk.

Smiling at the woman who had just paused to stare at the mad kid lying on the floor; I mouthed a hi at her glad that neither I nor my mum knew her. I made my way down the road making sure no one else was around. Luckily for me it seemed all my friends had decided to stay at school today. Tuff was notorious for skipping three times a week at least. He would have no future once he left school, though with the amount that I've skipped I wouldn't be doing much better.

As I walked my stomach rumbled like mad. I was starving, I hadn't eaten all day and I was sure that Sarah had had nothing too. I was about to start running when it dawned on me. I had practically decided that I wasn't going to shoplift without even meaning to. "I could get the money as a just in case" I mumbled to myself. I nodded at my own words, I could do that, and I could get some food too. It would be a nice surprise for Sarah if I had something to give her. Especially as it won't be half eaten fish. I smirked at that, it seemed like months ago that that happened, we ate toothless' fish and got extremely ill from it. I was never eating that again just the thought of it made my stomach turn. Ridding myself of the thoughts in my mind I finally started running towards my house.

****please read review****

26. Chapter 26

The stitch had come back full force and I had my hand pressed against my side as it felt it would explode should I move it. I hadn't properly participated in PE at school for any lesson before and after the holiday and I was sure it showed. Too many days of lying in bed eating crisps.

"I swear, once I meet back up with Sarah, I am so making an exercise plan and she's following it too." I mumbled to myself, I had done a lot for her and I'm going to use that to make her do something I want to do. I laughed silently to myself, my mum always said compromise was part of a healthy relationship. Guess me and Sarah were going to do that.

It felt like forever till I was at my house and I couldn't be more grateful, I really had to start exercising. I made it to the front door and unlocked it far quicker than I had the last time. I was paranoid that my mum would be there but I already knew that she wouldn't be. She would be at work. I walked into the house and I closed the door softly behind my back. I paused momentarily just to make sure I couldn't hear even the slightest creak of the floorboards. After a few moments I sighed in relief, nothing. She was at work, I pushed off my shoes and walked into my house.

I wanted to turn the TV on, I had recorded something the last time I was here and I still hadn't watched it. I made myself turn away from the TV and start towards the stairs. I was going to steal a little of her money, not too much but just enough to buy her something along with myself. I had done it before and knew just how much to take, before I had taken too much and she had spent half an hour looking for the money in her room. When I had asked she said she had lost an earring. That was a blatant lie, she didn't even have her ears pierced. When she did find a ball of money (who it was from and why I hadn't found that before was still a mystery) she had looked a lot brighter and had claimed that she no longer needed the 'missing' earring.

I hadn't believed my luck when she found a mystery wad of notes and had made sure I could figure out how much was just enough so I wouldn't push my luck again. It was about five notes, they were all different ones. Some were twenty pounds some fifty but most were five and ten pounds. I wasn't sure what to take, maybe about thirty quid, I could always take a bit more and keep it for myself. I smiled to myself momentarily, I had been told countless times by friends from school that I'd end up in prison by the age of nineteen. They never specified what I would be in prison for but I had an idea that they thought stealing, and to be honest I couldn't blame them I was starting to think the same thing myself. I should probably stop doing it soon but I had to get some things for Sarah and as long as I had to get things for her I didn't mind stealing. It always made her smile when I got something we needed. As long as she didn't find out that stealing was how I got the things we needed I would keep doing it. Just so she'd smile.

I quickly shook that thought out of my head. What was wrong with me? It seemed that ever since I kissed her I had been focusing on everything she did. Remembering everything she did over the years, the years I barely noticed her and at one point in time, I'm ashamed to admit, thought she had moved away. It was only now that I realised that during that time she sat in front of me in lesson. I ran my hand through my hair. How could I have been that oblivious? It was no wonder she thought everyone hated her. I can admit that a lot of the school hates her, but not the adults, they don't like her because she unintentionally causes trouble for them but they'd never hate her. I felt so guilty at knowing that she felt I hated her and, though I hadn't meant to, over the years I had reaffirmed that belief.

I had to think of a way to fix that. I didn't know what I was going to do but I was going to do something to fix this. I took the money I needed and replaced the lamp back where it was. It took me about three tries to make it balance, I would have fixed the bottom of the lamp had my mum known that I knew of this place. Unfortunately I couldn't do that or I'd be grounded for eternity. I was probably going to be already, she was more than annoyed when I skipped half a day. Now I've cut the entire day and I'm with the daughter of a guy she hates. A smile came to my lips at that, but I quickly shook it away. It was stupid smiling for a few words that to anyone else would have just been that. But to me it made it sound almost like we were dating behind my mum's back.

That thought was what made me smile. I didn't know if it was the thought of going behind my mum that was what made me smile, kind of like forbidden love that are in all those romance stories. Stories

I've never read but my mum loves them. Or if it was the thought of being with her in the whole. It would be slightly weird if it was that, I mean it wasn't as though we were dating. I did kiss her once but that was it, nothing else before or after.

I placed the money into my pocket and left the room. I'd have to hurry and get back to her, it wouldn't do any good if one of us got caught. It wouldn't do any good for me if she was caught, I'd never hear the end of it if she was, she was already paranoid. If she ended up being caught she could be taken out of school and if she wasn't I could bet any money that she'd be chained to it. Never able to go anywhere but school and home. I smirked at the image that came into my mind, she was tied to the school by handcuffs that acted like an extendable lead for a dog. Dragging her back whenever she strayed too far.

I couldn't help thinking that my mind was a little screwed up if that was the first thing that came to mind. I hoped she wouldn't be caught, if she was then I didn't know what I would do to save her. I could always blame myself for everything. I left my house no more than a minute later and started my way down the path. There wasn't anyone around but it felt almost like I was being watched. I turned from where I was stood and glanced down the street...no one. Just like I thought. I turned back around and couldn't stop the yelp of surprise that came from my lips.

There stood before me was a huge figure, it must have been about six and a half to seven foot tall. I looked up the huge body and saw someone who I recognised from the TV. What was his name? I thought for a moment before it clicked. James Dawson. I stared up at him, I opened my mouth not knowing what to say. "Hi" I mumbled knowing I sounded stupid.

"Hello, what're you doing out here? I didn't think school was out yet?" He asked me and I swallowed nervously.

"Uh yea it isn't I kind of skipped" I answered nervously.

"Go back to school kid, do that and I won't tell anyone about running into you" he told me and I stared up at him dumbstruck. I didn't know what to do so I just nodded. He must have thought I had left during break or something.

"Alright." I answered stupidly. I had no idea what I should say. He nodded at me and left me, turning and walking back down the road around the corner and out of my sight. I almost laughed, I wasn't going back to school. Instead I was going to take full advantage of what I was just given. I ran as quietly as I could to the end of the road and peaked around the corner. I saw just what I expected. He was there with another man dressed in black. They were talking hushed but I could still make out their words.

"Have we located the Night Fury yet?" The one who just spoke to me asked.

"Yes, we have. Daniel from the other group believes he's found a route towards the area he's hiding in. We should be able to get there and take it out." My jaw dropped. They couldn't have found toothless, could they?

"Excellent. We'll leave for there tonight, once everyone is in for the curfew. And I was meaning to congratulate you on that. It has made our job far easier without these pests around twenty-four seven. Is there anything else on the attack tonight?" I stared at him confused, attack? What attack?

"Yes, we believe that though it will be a small attack there will be one. Mainly Gronckle's we should be able to handle them no problem. My team and I will handle it for you Sir, you can give your full attention to the Night Fury." I saw the man I had just talked to nod.

"Good, leave now and form your plan for tonight. I'll go inform those who will be working with me tonight. Let's hope that we can take this Night Fury and move onto the next village. We'll kill all these dragons if it's the last thing we do."

"Yes Sir, let's hope. I'm sure we'll be victorious." The man who James was talking to nodded leaving the man I had been speaking with. Not a moment later he left too. I was the only one left on the road and it wasn't till after a few moments when I realised my mouth was hanging open. I have to find Sarah.

****please read review****

27. Chapter 27

I had to have looked like a mad man when I ran down the street, barrelling into mothers with their toddlers in prams. I would have shouted back an apology but I was in far too big a rush to do that. I couldn't think where she would be but I hoped that by sheer luck she'd still be in the woods trying to debate with herself on whether or not to leave the safety it offered. Knowing her as well as I did I doubted she'd step out of the tree line. Her dad had really instilled a fear of risk taking. I wasn't sure the reason but something in the back of my mind told me it had to do with her mother's death.

It would make sense if it was, I know I was affected when my granddad died in a plane crash. I have a fear of planes now and it was probably something that contributed to my resistance of flying on toothless. I smiled slightly at my revelation. I had never thought that was why I might be scared of planes. I had always just assumed that it was because I had an ingrained fear from natural instinct. Flying for humans was stupid. I carried on running down the paths towards the woods, I kept myself aware of the roads, I wasn't going to be idiotic and get myself run over.

I knew what would happen if I was, would I get sympathy, no. I would get Tuff laughing like crazy at me and Sally trying to wrap me in bubble wrap while taking the opportunity to try to kiss me. I shuddered at the thought of that. If she'd kiss me I'd probably die from anger and utter outrage. I turned down a path that led to the woods, I paid no attention to where I was going and slammed into a very moveable object. Instead of collapsing onto my back like I usually did when I collided into someone I fell straight down face first. Face first onto the person I collided with.

I couldn't see who it was but I knew it was a girl. I could tell that from the mass of hair that was now in my mouth. Spitting it out I

brought a hand up to wipe my face, it tasted kind of like fish. I grimaced before wondering who would have fish smelling hair. It didn't occur to me that I was still on the girl.

"Uh, Arden, do you mind getting up? I'm being crushed." The voice made me snap from my thoughts and turn to the body beneath me. What I saw made a bright red blush cross my face. Sarah, I had landed on Sarah.

I scrambled to my feet pulling her up at the same time.

"Uh, s-sorry, I-uh didn't see you there" I admitted not looking her in the eye as she dusted herself down.

"Well at least we're even now." She mumbled so quietly I almost missed it.

"What was that?" I asked finally looking up and meeting her gaze.

"I fell on you a little while back now we're even." She pointed out making me smile. Yea, she did do that. And for a small girl she didn't half know how to crush a guy. I smiled at her, almost forgetting what I was supposed to be telling her.

"Oh yeah, I almost forgot. Sarah, I ran into those guys who're looking for toothless. They think they can get to him tonight and that there'll be an attack on the village." She looked shocked at what I had to tell her and I just nodded in response. Telling her this was the truth. She was gaping at me not knowing what to say to me. I didn't know how to answer her stunned face so I just waited, placing my hands in my pockets.

"Uh, uh, w-what?" She finally managed to ask, and I could understand why she was so shocked. Hell I was shocked just saying it to her and I knew it was the truth.

"Yeah, I did just say what you think I did" I answered glancing past her momentarily my eyes catching the basket behind her. Once I turned my eyes back to her I could see what looked like mild hyperventilating. I stared at her not knowing what to do to try to fix this.

"We have to get toothless out of the cove." She mumbled looking as though she was quite badly lost in her thoughts. Not bothering to answer her mutterings, I knew she couldn't hear me in the state she was in, I grabbed at her hand reaching around her to latch onto the basket.

Swinging the strap around my shoulder I started to drag her towards the shop. It'd be easier to get him out of the cove if he wasn't hungry. If he was like me and every other boy I knew his mind wouldn't be working too well if he was hungry. I was pretty much worthless to my friends if I hadn't had something to eat. I was the least sociable man on Earth if I hadn't had my dinner.

I kept hold of her hand as I picked up the pace slightly, I kept glancing back to her she wasn't looking forwards and was muttering to herself absentmindedly. I had seen her do this enough to know what was wrong, she was thinking things through, in her mind she was planning what we had to do. I had seen this about three to four times

a day, I don't even think she knows she does this. I always found that look on her face to be funny. She looked so gormless. Shaking my head at her I pulled her closer to me and kept her in my line of sight. I was more than a little worried that she'd end up flat on her face.

Keeping a tight grip on her hand I kept my arm locked to help keep her up right. Sometimes I wondered who the more mature one was. It was usually her but right now I felt like I was a parent looking after a daydreaming toddler. I laughed at that thought, hoping she couldn't hear me.

It must have taken up to ten minutes to make it to the only shop I knew where you could walk in at any time and they didn't care. It didn't matter how old you were or if you were clearly a kid skipping school, they didn't care. They just wanted their money. That was why I came here a lot, all the other shops in the village wouldn't let you in during school hours. It was stupid.

I pulled her through the sliding doors and smiled at the almost empty shop, it was only small, not having most of the items every other shop had. But it did have an advantage; it was dead cheap. Pulling Sarah inside the building I smiled to the woman in front of us as she swept the floor. I glanced to the clock I knew was against the wall and stared at it in shock. It was almost dinner. How had time gone so fast? Shaking my head I pushed that thought to the back of my mind. It wasn't an important thing, what was important was stopping those men getting Toothless and doing who knows what to him.

"Arden, where are we going? The fish is in the other direction." I paused as the words and blinked my eyes, almost as though I was in a trance. A small embarrassed blush came to my face as I saw I was heading in the opposite direction. Where was I going? I had no idea, shaking my head to remove the confusion and hopefully the blush I turned and pulled her again. "You know, I think I should pull you. You obviously don't know where you're going." She mused and though it sounded as though it was to me I knew she was just thinking aloud.

Still I wasn't going to ignore her. Even if she did think she was speaking in her head. I dropped her hand momentarily and looked at her when she turned in confusion.

"Lead the way" I told her motioning for her to do just that.

"Really?" She asked, her confusion shifting to a smile. "I never get to lead." She announced as she took my hand now pulling me in the direction she thought was right. I laughed slightly to myself, I could remember her telling me this before.

Hiccup's POV

The smile on my face showed just how happy I was, I was never allowed to lead. I was going to relish in this moment. But the truth was that I had no idea where I was going, I had expected him to do what everyone did and just to ignore me when I pointed out that he was going the wrong way. But he didn't. He was different to everyone else I knew. That fact would slip my mind quite a lot, I kept thinking he was the way I used to think of him as. Ignorant. But he wasn't, he

wasn't like my dad and everyone else in Berk. He was different, better.

"You don't know where you're going either do you?" I turned at the voice and was met with a smirking face.

"W-what d-do you mean, of c-course I know where I'm going." I stuttered standing up straighter and pulling him with fake confidence. I cursed myself as soon as I pulled him, why didn't I just ask him to help? I don't know, but then again a girl will do anything to prove herself to her crush.

"Sarah, why don't we just split up? It's a small shop and I'm sure it will help us if we split up. If we find the fish just call for the other. It's not like we'll be annoying anyone, it is a small shop and we're the only ones in here." He tried to convince me but I just shook my head. No, I would just annoy him.

"Sorry," I answered though it was clear from my tone that I didn't mean it. He just sighed and rolled his eyes. "Don't be like that." I teased, pulling him closer as I turned blindly down another aisle. What greeted us was something that made a huge smile grow on my face though I had to try and hide it as much as I could. It would make it clear this was luck if he saw it. I had found Toothless' fish. I stuck my chest out and proclaimed "see, I told you I knew where I was going. And you doubted me"

I smirked at him as I pulled him trying not to look too smug at the look that appeared on his face. I don't think he liked that I was right. As far as he knew I had found this from knowledge not luck. And I was going to make sure that he didn't find out the truth.

"Come on, don't pout" I teased as I pinched his cheeks in a condescending way, making him glare at me. "You can pay for it if you want?" I asked despite the fact that he'd have to pay for it, he had the basket and the money. I had a smug look on my face.

"I hate it when you get like this" he muttered to himself making me laugh.

"Like what?"

"Smug"

I quirked an eyebrow at him as he readjusted the basket on his shoulder; he was trying to look a little bitter at me but I could see the smirk on his face.

"Come on, let's pay for it, I want to get back to Toothless, hopefully we can move him from the cove before those men get to him. I'm not going to let them touch him." I told him determination clear in my tone. He just nodded at me.

"Alright, but before we pay for it we have to choose some first." He deadpanned. I blushed in embarrassment

"Oh, yeah, I forgot about that" I admitted rubbing the back of my head. He just smirked at me and took my arm pulling me closer to the food. I would have protested at the pulling but I was still slightly

embarrassed and didn't trust myself to say something intelligent. Keeping my mouth closed I watched him silent as he started to grab as much food as he could carry. Not bothering about the price.

I would have probably paid it a little heed, but I wasn't saying anything. If he wanted to get too much then so be it. Let him be embarrassed. Folding my recently freed arms across my chest I nodded to myself. It was his problem.

****please read review****

28. Chapter 28

"Can you just knock off like five pounds?" He whined as he leaned against the till a spotty teen was sitting behind. The man behind the till looked completely bored and was constantly yawning.

"No, pay the price or put it back" the man answered blinking through bleary eyes. I was stood about three feet behind him smirking to myself, I knew this was going to happen. He just groaned in annoyance and started to search his pockets.

"But, I was sure I had enough" he complained as he kept searching. I watched as he pulled out different pieces of paper, the paper looked quite water damaged.

"Yeah, well apparently you don't now, so just pay for what you can and move on" the bored teen told him as he leaned back in his chair. He looked bored with everything and almost on the verge of sleep. I shook my head at him and smirked as he pulled out different packets of fish and dropped them on the checkout in a huff.

"I told you this would happen" I stated from a few feet behind.

"Shut up" he answered bitter, scowling to the till that he was still leaning against slightly.

"Alright, I was going to offer to help, but if you don't want me to talk to you. Fine." I smirked to myself as he glared at me over his shoulder. I was enjoying this, it was rare that I was the one who wasn't embarrassing themselves. I stayed back and had a smirk on my face, I was enjoying this more than I probably should.

"Sarah, please be quiet" he all but begged through gritted teeth. He was getting stressed and it was as evident as his blond hair. I did as he told and kept quiet watching as he finally managed to pay for Toothless' food. Packing everything back into his basket he swung it back over his shoulder. "Well that took a long time to do." He mumbled to himself as he started to leave the shop. Smirking, still, I followed him from the shop and allowed him to mumble, bitter to himself away from the street and head back to the woods.

After a few minutes it became boring to hear him mumble to himself, talking about the world being against him. It was bordering on annoying, so I placed my hand on his shoulder and forced him to face me. Without any warning I slapped him as hard as I could across his face. So hard in fact that his head was whipped to the other side. He stared at me wide eyed with his mouth slightly open.

"What the hell?" He asked his hand going to his cheek which had already turned a slight reddish colour.

"It was necessary, you were getting annoying." I stated simply. As he opened his mouth to retort to me a male voice caught our attention.

"Arden!" Our heads snapped in the direction of the voice and we were met with Tuffnut Thorston. Great.

"Hey Tuff" he greeted, one hand still on his cheek.

"What're you doing here? I didn't see you in first lesson." He asked as he came over, either ignoring me or he simply didn't notice I was there.

"What, we had first together?"

"Yeah Arden, it was PE. You weren't there. I only went so we could talk. I've gotta talk to you about Haddock, my sis says the two of you are together a lot. Sally's getting jealous and is nagging Ruff. I gotta talk to ya 'bout that. Not that I care, but I gotta be a big brother every once in a while, right? Do as the sister says every once in a while." I stared at the twin; I was starting to believe that he didn't know I was there.

"We can talk about it later Tuff. I can't right now. I kind of have to go with 'Haddock' somewhere" I noticed how he answered him, he sounded mildly mad when he repeated my last name. He looked stunned at that and finally turned to face me.

"Get lost Haddock, he's just being nice to you. He's far too nice to tell you to leave. I'll do him a favour, get lost. You're not important" his words hurt and I almost shrank away, despite knowing I had to go to Toothless.

"Shut up Tuff," my mouth dropped open, was that Arden's voice? "Leave us Tuff, we need to get going." He placed a hand on my elbow and started to lead me away towards the woods. I turned to see Tuffnut, he was staring shocked, his mouth was hanging and he looked like he'd just been slapped. I pulled a face and turned to walk on my own. That was interesting.

Tuffnut's POV

I stared stunned, had Arden just sided with Haddock? With _Hiccup_? That couldn't be right. I shook my head and pulled out my phone, I had to tell Ruff, she had to tell Sally and then I can leave them to sort this out. That Haddock girl had really messed Arden's head, hadn't she?

"What do you want, idiot, you talked to Arden yet?"

"He just left, you know you should be a little nicer to me, I have news."

"What?" She asked, her voice rising.

"You gonna be nice?"

"Sure"

"Arden sided with Hiccup, he's taken her into the woods, get here quick and we'll be able to catch up to them. We can spy on them and then we can see what the girls done to his head. And hopefully fix it. I'm not losing my best friend to Haddock."

"We'll see you in a few minutes, don't move"

"Where would I go?"

"Shut up" without another word the phone was disconnected and I was left to wait for my twin and Sally. Sighing I stuffed my phone into my pocket. For God's sake Arden, what has that girl done to you?

I didn't know the answer to my own question, and that worried me. I knew him better than anyone, he was my closest friend and I knew everything that went on in his life. Or at least I did. I never thought he'd go for Haddock, I wonder what she has over him. I bet he's only with her because she's blackmailing him. Damn it Arden, what am I going to do with you?

I know it's only short but the next chapter will be longer. Please read review

29. Chapter 29

I had found a seat to sit on and was on the verge of falling asleep when a bang on the bench I was sitting on shook me. Snapping my eyes open I glared at the face I knew I was going to meet. A face almost identical to mine.

"Ruff!" I snapped at her as she smirked at me.

"What? I came, and I brought Sal" she answered as she dropped beside me

"Good for you" I muttered irritated and pushed myself up to my feet. "Come on then. I'll show you where they went. Let Sally blow up in their faces. I think Arden needs it" motioning for them to follow me I led them towards the woods. I had a faint idea where they'd go as I had seen them sneak off together before, they always seemed to follow this one path. And if they were people with patterns then they'd be going that way again.

It took us a while but eventually I could hear Arden's voice. It sounded almost like he was irritated, at Hiccup? Probably.

"Listen Sarah, I want to feed him, I like feeding him. I think it's making us form a bond. You fly him and I feed him. Cos God knows I'm not flying him again. He's impossibly, you die trying to fly him"

"Fine, if you're going to be a baby, I'll fly him. But just know, if we don't get him out of there I have no doubt he'll be killed. We both know that'll happen, so I'm fine with the possibility that I'll get hurt" I could tell I was just as perplexed as they were at this. Who was 'him'? I didn't know and I was sure they were no more in the

light than I was. It went against my entire being not to go running in there and demand to know but I knew just like my sister did that that would be a bad idea. It would be easier if we just followed. And we'd be more likely to hear the truth. If we confronted them now then we'd be given a tall tale.

"Don't be like that, you're going to make me feel guilty. You know I care about Toothless, and I don't want him to be hurt. But don't make me feel guilty" I stared at nothing at that, Toothless? Who was that?

"I know, look, there's no point arguing about this now. Let's go and find him. Every second we waste here we give them a chance to find him" I could hear their feet quickly quieting as they ran away. I turned to my sister and saw that she was just as perplexed. While Sally just looked mad. She had her teeth gritted. As I was about to ask what was bothering her she answered.

"I hate her! How dare she take my boyfriend and play happy families?!" Rolling my eyes I decided not to point out that they weren't dating. There'd be no point. She'd just get upset.

"Yeah, yeah, Sally, come on then. Let's follow them, we're going to lose them if we don't get moving now." I had never really taken the leader role, I had always left that to Arden, he'd always been a leader. But right now, it seemed like Hiccup was the leader. Hiccup! If she could be the leader then I had to step up and become on too.

I started to run off after the two and didn't have to even glance behind me to see if I was being followed. I could hear how heavy their steps were. Neither of them were the lightest things on Earth. Their steps were very loud and if we hadn't waited quite as long as we had I had no doubt that they'd have heard us. But I didn't mention anything to them. I didn't need grief and I had no doubt that that would be what I got if I said even one word to them.

Toothless' POV

I was laid stretched out in the sun just by the lake. It was very peaceful at this time of day. Early mornings had always been a favourite of mine. And though it was verging on midday the air still held that scent. Like the world was coming alive. The grass had dew on it making it the perfect bed frame and the charred earth underneath me was warming my belly ever so slightly. It was a mixture of warm and cold, the cold of the dew drops mixed with the warm of my fire bed made me both awake and sleepy. I had become quite lazy as of late, too used to lying in and waiting for Sarah and Arden. And as much as I hate to say it, I'm reliant on them.

This would have never happened before but I don't mind, too much at least. They bring me food and they've given me my freedom back, as much of it as they can at least. I'm eternally grateful to them and will protect them as a form of repayment. Though nothing I can ever do will repay them for saving me, for feeding me and keeping me alive. But more importantly, I can never thank them enough for restoring my flight. I had thought I was a bird with clipped wings, not anymore. Not thanks to them.

I was semi-free. As free as I could be thanks to those hunters who

trapped me in their snare and tore off my tail. I wasn't an old dragon, by any means, more I was classified as a teenager. I was young, most of my kind lived for hundreds of years. To have my tail tore off in such a barbaric way sickens me. But now I was far freer than I ever thought possible. Yes I was trapped in here but now I could be free with them here. To stay free I'd have to protect them. My head perked up at a sound of rustling above me. I would always feel vulnerable in this cove. Too many high walls that held countless dangers.

Pushing myself up into a crouched position I prepared myself to pounce on whoever it was but as soon as I heard talking I relaxed.

"Arden, where're you going?"

"I don't know." I smirked to myself at the two humans. Of course it was them, I didn't know why I was getting myself so worked up. They were the only people who knew about me, and despite my injury I could still take any animal in this forest.

"Come on, this way, honestly you'd think you'd lost your mind or something. Not even knowing where the entrance to Toothless' home is." I could imagine her shaking her head at the boy in an almost patronising way. Smirking I made my way over to the only escape route, not counting the top of the cove, crouching down again and letting myself look up through the door. I had always hated this thing, it was like it was taunting me, there was an escape route but I was too big for it. I could hear them coming down through the entrance though and that snapped me from my somewhat bitter thoughts.

"Shut up Sarah, honestly, I think I'm allowed a slip up every now and again." I smirked, but not before I caught scent of something. Was that food? Yes, but there was something else too. What was that? It smelled like blood. Faint, but it was definitely blood. It's those hunters! They were around those hunters! I growled deep in my throat at the thought, those hunters were around them. I swear if they're hurt I'll kill those hunters.

I could see their feet near and I couldn't help sitting up, in what seemed to me, like a dog. Normally I wouldn't like to label myself as a pet. But with these humans it didn't bother me. That thought caused me a lot of confusion. But thankfully I didn't have to dwell on that for long as they came down the slope that led to here and their faces immersed. I smiled at them, that gummy grin I had learned from them not too long ago. I could feel my tail wagging, only adding to my dog thoughts, but I didn't care.

"Hi, Toothless" Sarah greeted as she scratched me behind my ear. I could feel a purr well up in my throat at that. So, I was a dog, cat hybrid? Rolling my eyes at my own thoughts I shook my head to clear it of my irritating thoughts. "Toothless? Are you alright? You look a little lost" she noted as she stood back and stared me in the eye.

Knowing I couldn't say anything to her, thanks to the language barrier. I had to think of something to assure her. What I did was lick her from the bottom of her shirt to her hair line. Pulling a face she pulled her hands down herself. I ginned at her grimace and

saw that she was trying to get my spit off her. I had to restrain myself from laughing at that.

"Thanks Toothless." She tried to sound sincere but it was clear that she wasn't as grateful as she tried to make out. I made myself look as innocent as possible as I tilted my head slightly to the side, in a way that always made her smile. It seemed to work once more as a small smile appeared on her slightly wet face.

"Yeah, you look real grateful" Arden mumbled making me grin.

"Shut up, he's just trying to reassure me. I'm sure." She stated very sure of herself, and she was right.

"If you say so" was all the blond answered with, a roll of his eyes. I just smirked at him, he did doubt her a lot, and she was right quite a bit about me. He should learn to trust her more. As much as he says he does.

"I do say so, but anyway, let's start to feed him. We do have to hurry if we're going to get him out of here." That caught me off guard, get me out of here? Why? Knowing I couldn't speak to her I nudged at her side and tilted my head to show confusion. "What? Oh you're probably a bit confused aren't you? We have to get you out of here, I can explain more on the way."

Not feeling any kind of relief at her answer I merely nodded and sat on the ground waiting for my food. It was a lot easier being hand fed than going fishing. I never was a good fisher, always got angry too fast and lost whatever food I'd managed to snag.

He threw me my first food and I snatched it so quick I didn't even get the chance to see what it was. My guess was Icelandic cod but I couldn't be sure, I never even tasted it. I was starved. In fact I had almost forgotten what the feel of hunger was they'd been feeding me so well.

"Christ Toothless, at least chew. It looks like you're just inhaling your food." He joked as he pulled more food out of the basket. I wanted to turn to see where Sarah had gone but the food kept me transfixed. But I could feel my tail being pulled so I was fairly certain that she was messing with my tail. I hoped she was fixing it and not taking it off. Paranoid, I know, but when one is given back something important to them you don't want to lose it for anyone.

Pushing my thoughts from that I turned back to my meal, sure that they'd tell me what was going off soon.

Sorry if it's full of typos, I did check it through but I only skimmed it because I'm in a rush to get this up. Please read review

30. Chapter 30

Hiccup's POV

I had to try and do something to his tail to ensure it wouldn't close while we were flying him out of the cove. It wouldn't have to last

long, just long enough that we could get him up the side of the cove. I had tried to tighten the strap a little to try and make it ridged, but that just made the belt stretch and I worried for its strength. I had tried to jam it into the out position. But it seemed I would have to be basic. I would jam it open with a stick. Primitive but it always worked in books.

Pushing myself up from the dirt floor I dusted myself down and turned to watch Arden feed him. He threw the dragon fish after fish. Almost looking like a machine, in a way, he'd throw a fish turn and throw another and at the same time Toothless would eat it barely having time to finish chewing it before another was thrown. From the looks of it they were so busy that neither had noticed that I had stood.

Not saying anything I took my chance and left to find a suitable stick. We did have to hurry, there was no time to waste precious seconds on talking to them.

As I searched the dirt ground I kept glancing back at them watching as they seemed to have started up a debate. About what? I could only guess, but I could see Arden shaking the basket. Seemed he'd finished feeding him and Toothless wasn't happy.

"Sarah, isn't this everything we bought?" He shouted across to me.

"Yeah, it is" I answered, trying to keep the bored tone from my voice.

"Oh yeah, cos that tone is really going to convince him isn't it?" He asked making me roll my eyes. Seemed I'd failed.

"Fine, Toothless, Arden was too stubborn to buy cheaper fish so that's all we've got" I shouted over, smirking at the scowl he sent me.

"Am I supposed to say thank you for that?" He asked making me shrug, my smirk not failing. "And what the hell are you doing?" He shouted over standing up and squinting slightly to try and see me clearer.

"You don't have to say thanks but I am doing something important. You just keep him entertained while I look for it" I shouted to him. I could see him scowl at not getting an answer but I didn't say anything back to him. "Oh, and Arden, make sure he doesn't move anywhere, I don't want him to move, I have just set that thing in the right position." I saw him scowl all the more at me as he had been about to guide Toothless around the cove.

"Make up your mind. Do you want me to keep him still or keep him entertained?" He shouted, sounding slightly stropky.

"Stop being mardy. Just keep his attention on you. I don't want him walking around. I just got his tail right. It took the mick keeping it in the right place. So don't move him or I'll nag you" I threatened

"You already do that" he quipped making me glare none seriously at him

"Trust me, you don't know what nagging is" I know he retorted with some smart Alec response but I didn't hear him. I was far too bothered with what I'd just found. It was a stick, obviously, and it was slightly too big but it looked strong and it would be the best thing I could find. Every other stick I had seen had been far too flimsy. They looked like dead branches that had been scorched. But this looked to be in better condition.

Grabbing it I made my way back over to Arden who had resorted to scratching him to make him stay still. I was unable to keep the smirk off my face at the sight. Toothless' back leg was shaking as though he were a dog

"So what'd you grab?" He asked me as I stood beside him.

"What do you mean?" I asked back, far too occupied with watching Toothless lay on the floor. Thankfully his back legs were still straight.

"Oh, come on Sarah, I'm not blind you picked something up."

"Oh that, it's just a stick to wedge his tail open. Oh yeah, and you have to sit on his back and hold me on" I saw his face pale slightly at that.

"W-what?" He asked, making me tilt my head in confusion. He looked almost scared at the thought. "Sarah, I'm not, repeat, not going on him. I like Toothless but I'm not flying on him. Not after last time. No, just no."

I rolled my eyes at him, was he seriously getting a fear of flying? Now was not the time to develop a fear.

"Arden, please, just for a few minutes." I tried pleading annoying myself as I'd actually clasped my hands as though I were praying.

"No"

"Don't you care that they may kill him?"

"Find a way so we don't die on him then I'll consider flying on him" I sighed dragging a hand through my hair. But I did have an idea that may work.

"How about, we get him out of here, it'll only take a minute. And you can lead him down to the ocean, it'll take you maybe an hour to do that. But, and stay with me on this, I can go to Gobber-"

"Gobber? Why'd you go to him?"

"Alright, not many people know this about him but before he lost his arm and leg he used to love horses. He keeps a few saddles in his garage for sentimental reasons-"

"You're suggesting we ride him like a horse?"

"No, the saddle is to keep us on, and I can maybe fit something on to help with his tail"

"But where'd we go to make that for him?"

"The same place we went for his fin." I stated as though it were obvious, which it was.

"Why there? Why not at school? It could be our DT project" I tried not to smile at the word 'our' and instead answered.

"First of all, we don't know what we're doing in DT seeing as we're never at school anymore and secondly 'our'? We do have to do one each."

He rolled his eyes and muttered something that sounded like. 'Technicality'.

"Maybe, but stop whining. If we actually go to school tomorrow we can ask. Alright?" I almost felt like a parent negotiating with a stubborn child, that thought did make me smirk.

"Yeah, alright. Now, we need to stop stalling and get on with getting him out. Wedge that stick in, and hold onto him. I am not getting on him." My mouth dropped as I was about to whine but nothing came out. All I managed to do was grab his forearm and shake it in a 'why'. "Cos I ain't. Got it? Sarah you're a friend but even you can't make me get onto him"

I tried to hide my disappointment but it was quite hard. I knew him as a strong lad and now he was scared of flying cos of a few incidents.

"Please, come on Arden, I want you to come with me."

"No, Sarah, don't even try."

I dropped his arm and scowled at him, letting out a small huff I turned my back to him.

"Fine be that way"

"Don't be like that, come on, we need to get him out of here. I won't fly on him but I want to get him out of here. Just cos I can't do that doesn't mean I don't care about the daft dragon." I rolled my eyes at him but no longer cared that he was being stubborn.

"Fine" I sighed and turned to Toothless, I knelt down beside his tail and jammed the slightly too big stick into the fin. I could feel the muscles in his tail twitching making my breath catch in my throat. I patted his tail softly, trying to make him calm down. "Shh, Toothless, it's alright, calm down" I soothed, he didn't seem to be listening to me but at least his tail didn't whip out. I dread to think what could happen should that tail hit me.

Because the stick was too big it made his tail move out of the position I had it set in. True, it did annoy me that that was happening but at least it still looked somewhat how I wanted it to. Straightening myself I turned to look at him.

"Alright, we don't have much time left, let's get on him and get him as far from here as possible. I'm sure we'll be able to find

somewhere to hide him. It's not like this part of the woods has ever been explored. Maybe there's another cove" I proposed as I climbed onto Toothless' back, noting that he shifted uncomfortable. "It's alright Toothless, we'll be safe soon and you can sulk about me sitting on your back"

"You can get on him Sarah, but I told you I'm staying right here and will see you on the other side. Wait for me when you get out. Ok?" I sighed, hoping that maybe he'd just get on the back of him and fly with me. It wasn't fair really. My one chance to be close to him and he had to develop a fear.

"Alright. Have it your way" I greed trying not to look as bitter as I was. Grabbing onto Toothless' neck scales I tried to find as much grip as I could. Which was about the same amount as on a greasy floor. And told him, in as little a shaky voice as I could manage. "Toothless, I need you to fly, that way" I held my hand out next to his eye so he could see where I was pointing before quickly reattaching my grip.

He gave a single nod as his wings spread out, ominously slow. Was it me or was he purposefully scaring me? Maybe I was so scared things seemed to be slowing down? Whatever it was I didn't like it.

Before I could even think to complain he batted his wings and the ground, which I was staring at intensely, started to slowly leave me.

I pressed myself against him, feeling like I was trying to sink into him. Air from his wings was blowing on my legs, chilling them and making me shiver. Chancing a glance up I hoped to see Arden staring at me, to ensure I was alright, but to my dismay he'd turned and was walking from the cove. Presumably to make his way around.

Before I could even begin to feel bitter the ground seemed to shrink drastically and I could feel us moving forwards. I wondered why he was flying so much softer than he had previous times, but I had only micro-seconds to dwell on it. My hair was starting to be blown into my face and it took a lot of concentration not to get hair or bugs in my mouth. I'd screwed my eyes closed during some point of the last thirty seconds, and for that I was grateful.

I had no doubt that should my eyes be open I'd be screaming.

Pressing the side of my face against the smooth scales of his neck I could feel us lifting. And for that one split second all fear left me. It was working, it was, it was holding up and he was flying. But another thought also registered. I'm so lucky we don't have to turn. Because I knew that should he have to turn I'd be heading straight down to the hard unforgiving ground.

I scrunched my eyes up as tight as I could, hoping to crush the image in my head with the swirling lights behind my lids.

The image was of Toothless turning and the stick snapping in two. I could see it happening, a tree gets in the way and he's forced to turn, and I end up falling to the ground, nothing to support me and no dragon able to come save me. A shiver ran down my spine chilling my body. I didn't need that thought. I was bad enough as it

was.

Tensing as I felt his body tilt sharper to climb the side of the cliff I pulled my bottom lip into my mouth and chewed on it to try and calm my frazzled nerves.

It did little to help but the pain it caused added with the metallic taste that slowly filled my mouth allowed me to take my mind off the current situation for a few seconds.

A gasp escaped my mouth when he jerked his body as he dropped to the ground on top of the cove. My hand left his back and grabbed at my mouth. I could feel blood filling my mouth faster than before. Trying not to start swearing I mentally berated myself. That was intelligent wasn't it? Biting through my own lip.

Groaning to myself in irritation, I slid off his back and patted him. Nowhere near as pleased that he was out as I should have been. I walked around to face him and smiled despite my sore lip.

"Well done Toothless" I praised as I sat down before him, constantly licking at my still bleeding lip.

I scratched at the back of his ear rubbing at my mouth as I did, I leaned back and stared at the woods behind me. I knew it'd take a long time for him to get over here but I was interested to know if he could get through at all. I jumped at the feeling of something wet on my cheek. Turning my head I saw a big black head nuzzling me.

I laughed softly, trust me to jump at him. I should have been used to his silent movements by now.

"What is it Toothless, you glad we've got you out?" I asked watching as a wide toothless grin greeted me as my answer. Evidently he was. "I'm glad you're happy but we have to wait here for Arden, he's making his way around"

His smile dropped as he lowered himself down to lie on the floor. I was mildly amazed at him he was free yet he wasn't running off never to be seen again. Seems that we weren't just things he relied on for the need of it. Apparently we were friends with this dragon. It was nice to have that assurance.

"Go to sleep Toothless" I told him as I lay next to him, stretching my arms out over my head. Trying to hide the delight in my voice. We would celebrate when we were back together again, no sense doing the same thing twice just cos one person missed it.

Making myself comfortable on the long grass on the top of this side of the cove I closed my eyes and waited for the only other person to ever see a Night Fury.

If he could make it that is.

****please read review****

31. Chapter 31

"Sarah! Sarah! Where the hell are you? Sarah?" I pushed myself up

onto my hands and stared out at the trees that bordered the cove we'd just escaped. Was I hearing things? "Sarah!" Smiling softly I pushed myself to my feet.

"Over here!" I shouted, waving my hand in the air. Hoping I was visible to him. Apparently I was as his figure appeared in the tree lines moments later.

"There you are, uh, what the hell are you doing? You're laid on the ground" he asked, sounding bemused

"What? Oh yeah, I figured we'd wait for you to celebrate, no sense doing it twice" I watched as he laughed softly

"Yeah, alright, I suppose" he answered simply, as he stepped backwards a little to stare at the sleeping dragon. "I didn't think he'd stay if we got him from the cove. I think he likes you"

"Likes us" I corrected as I pushed myself to my feet.

"Yeah, alright, so...well done for not being killed" he tried to think on how to start

"You believed he'd kill me? I see you have little faith in him." I watched him smile somewhat sheepishly

"Well, I suppose I just presumed the worst would happen."

"So you let me go on a dragon despite the fact that you thought I'd die?" I was toying with him a little. I knew what he was trying to say. That he was worried for me. But he couldn't word it, like most men he can't admit something simple. So I was messing with him to try and get it from him.

"What?! No-no I-I never thought you'd die. I was just saying- just saying you might've" I placed my hand on his shoulder when he started rambling, attempting to make him quiet "but I never-never thought Toothless wou-" I had to cut him off there, clamping my hand over his mouth I saw the stunned look cross his face. Apparently he was so consumed with himself that he never even realised I was trying to shut him up.

"Shh" I told him, waiting for a nod before I removed my hand.

"Sorry"

"It's fine, but I'm starting to get a headache" and as though on cue with my words my head throbbed painfully. He gave a sheepish laugh and rubbed at the back of his head.

"Sorry"

"Stop saying that"

"Saying what?"

"Sorry"

"Oh sorry"

I breathed a heavy sigh, not sure if he was being intentionally irritating or if it was just an ingrained talent perfected over the years he spent ignoring me.

"Whatever" before I could lose my temper I span on my heels and looked over at Toothless, sleeping peacefully on the ground. "Hey, Toothless" I drawled, sounding almost like my dad when he used to wake me up as a child.

He cracked open an eye and stared at me as though I were a pest. I suppose I was waking him from his nap.

"I know this is the least climactic rescue of all time. Mainly because someone here couldn't put their fear aside for one minute. But why don't we get going now. Those people after you will be here soon. We don't need that happening."

I watched as he forced himself to his feet, stretching lazily and dropping back to the ground. Only this time looking more like a dog doing tricks or food. I quickly shook my head to remove the thought of asking for his paw, no point angering him. He may be nice but he was still a fire breathing dragon. And I for one don't have an ambition in being barbequed.

"Where should we go?" Arden asked as he looked around.

"What do you mean?"

"Well, we can't go that way, that'd be stupid" he pointed the way they'd just come from. "That way's a maybe. Right maybe too. I doubt we can go that way. It looks far too thick to go through and if we get Toothless through there we'll be leaving a clear trail pointing straight to him."

I sighed exasperated, it was true, we were stuck with left or right. Forwards, too thick, back, well that was just stupid. Right towards the sea or left towards the old blacksmiths where we made his tail. That'd be more practical, but they'd already been down that way. The hunters knew that way, right was less likely.

"Should we flip a coin?" He asked and we were so stuck that I had to just nod my head in agreement.

What else could we do?

"Alright, heads left tails right" I watched as he flipped the coin and could hardly believe that this was how we were going to decide on how to keep Toothless alive.

"Right" he stated as he showed me the coin.

"Ok, so we're going to the sea. Get him up and let's go, hopefully there'll be a cave there where we can hide him."

"There has to be, it's called a sea cave for a reason" I pointed out, but he just rolled his eyes and kept quiet. I wasn't sure if it was from being proven right or if what I'd just said was stupid. Honestly I didn't want to know which it was. It would probably save my pride.

"Whatever, come on Sar" he motioned for me to follow and I did without question. I had Toothless following me from a few feet behind but I was hardly concerned about that right now. Surprisingly, and perhaps stupidly, I was caught up in my head. He'd given me a nickname. I've never had one before.

I gasped at a nudging on my back, turning I caught the look of concerned green eyes. I smiled warmly at the dragon.

"It's alright Toothless, I'm fine, don't worry, you'll be safe soon" I assured him, speaking quietly as to not distract him. I didn't want Arden to get lost because I distracted him, if I did I'd never hear the end of it. He stared up at me cautiously but trusting my word. It was a strange look of mixed emotion but I didn't know how to make it go away. Giving him another smile I turned my back to him. It was alright Arden not getting lost but if we got lost that'd be worse.

I had the dragon after all.

Out of panic at seeing him starting to leave us behind I latched my hand onto his shirt. Extracting a startled yelp from him and a laugh from Toothless.

"Sarah, what the hell are you doing?"

"You were pulling ahead" I defended, trying not to notice the fact that he was only two or three steps in front of me. He looked back and raised a brow.

"I was really leaving you behind wasn't I? Seeing as you could grab onto me with your arm still bent."

"Shut up" I scowled at his mocking tone unclenching my fingers from around the fabric around his neck.

"Whatever" he sighed as he carried on walking, purposefully staying just a foot in front of me.

"Don't get so smug, it's not my fault I'm a little paranoid" I tried to defend myself but the damage was already done.

"I suppose, still, you're going a bit overboard aren't you?"

"Maybe to you yes, but not to me," I froze in my step getting a head butt in the back. Grumbling to myself quietly I turned, glancing around me in a panic.

"What's wrong? Don't tell me, the rocks are leaving you behind"

"Shut up, I got the feeling we were being watched"

"What? Watched, are you sure you're ok? Did you smack your head on the ground or something?"

"No, I don't really know where it came from. There's just this nagging feeling in the back of my head that we're being followed. I felt it a while back, just before we went to see Toothless but I haven't felt it since then."

"Where's it coming from?" He asked as he came over, glancing around me.

"I don't know, somewhere behind. Don't you feel it Toothless?" I questioned the dragon who merely tilted his head in confusion. Staring at him I shook my head, I must be going insane, honestly there's nothing wrong unless he freaks. "You know what, forget it I must be going insane. If he gets paranoid I'll tell you but until then let's just keep going. We've got no time to waste."

"Hey, you're the one who's making us keep stopping. You're the one who's wasting time." He protested but began to walk none the less. Still though, I couldn't shake that feeling. It had come so quickly that it caused more harm than good. How could it cause good? I don't know. But I kept reassuring myself by glancing back at the pure black dragon who was following me with a slightly sleepy step. A walk that definitely didn't suit him.

"I think he's falling asleep" I muttered as I stared at the back of his blond head.

"Well, there's more proof that you're going insane."

"I wouldn't go that far. I think paranoid because we ran into Tuffnut earlier." I argued as we walked, faintly noticing the smell of salt in the air, "are we there yet?" I asked, more to annoy him than anything. I knew we almost were but I wanted to frustrate him a little.

"I don't know, I'm not exactly an expert on this side of the woods. I always used to concentrate on getting to the impassable section. Not see if I could reach the sea"

"Then why aren't I in front. I've been there a few times?"

"Because in your condition you'd end up going the wrong way"

"What do you mean my condition?"

"Being a paranoid psycho"

"I'm not a psycho!" I protested as he smirked at me. He obviously didn't believe me but I didn't care. I was going to repeat it till he did, or my words just became noise.

Sorry it's so short but I've had the worse case of writers block lately and I've only just managed to get past it. I'll try and make the next chapter longer. Please read review

32. Chapter 32

Tuffnut's POV

That was close, I was sure Haddock had seen us. Thankfully they hadn't and she'd been dubbed insane but still. Close call. I wasn't too sure what we were seeing though. Well, me, they'd passed out at seeing the thing fly a little while back. While I, with my much more mature mind had only felt a little lightheaded at seeing the flying

thing. Uh, Toothless, I think's his name.

I'm saying though, and I don't care if they kill me, those two need to go on a diet because I just threw my back out dragging them. I thought girls were conscious about their weight.

Obviously not these two.

I had to keep fighting a sneeze that desperately wanted to come out, salt air always did that to me. But I couldn't, I was lucky that Toothless was too relaxed to sense me, Haddock though. Well, she's more jumpy than a bank robber afraid of getting caught in the act. I don't know any other type of bank robber. Well, maybe a cocky one? Anyway, I had to keep quite far back from them, for two reasons, one I was slightly paranoid they'd see me and two I had to drag these two with me. Honestly, their clothes are ruined.

I probably shouldn't drag them by their sleeves.

Oh well, no chance of going back now is there? No. Grabbing onto their arms once again I started to drag them in the direction of the shrinking black lizard. I didn't know what this Toothless was, but I presumed he was a rare lizard. Why else would he be being hunted? He had to have some worth. I'm not an expert on reptiles so a lizard is the best and most likely choice. I did hear my sister gasp 'dragon' as she fainted but that's just fantasy stuff. And I have two very good points. One dragons don't exist. And two, if they did why choose Haddock, Arden I could understand, but Haddock. They'd have better luck with a trout.

"W-what's going on?" Oh great the wicked witch of the west and her ugly troll friend are waking up.

"Well good morning Sleeping Ugly" I greeted my sister with a sickeningly sweet tone.

"W-who's sleeping?" She asked before her mind caught up and her fist planted in my face.

"Ow" I groaned as I lay on the dirt. "What a way to repay someone who's thrown his back out dragging two lumps"

"I'm not ugly, and just for the record we look the same so you're calling yourself ugly." I paused at that.

"Gotta admit I never thought of that."

"And you ruined my shirt. You're buying me a new one!"

"What?" I screeched as I pushed myself to my feet, still holding my nose. It didn't feel broken but it sure as hell hurt. "Please don't be broken" I begged softly before turning my eyes from my covered nose to my sister a glare fixed in place. "I'm not buying you a new one. You fainted. Not my fault" I defended trying not to sound funny with my nose being blocked of air.

"I fainted because I saw a dragon. You should have too idiot."

"I'm not an idiot and it's not even a dragon"

"Yes it is, have you not been watching the flying it did"

"Yes he did fly, but I don't think he's a dragon. Anyway, if you're gonna blame anyone for your shirt. Blame yourself, you should lose a few stone then we'll discuss whose fault it is-"

The next thing I knew I was on the floor, my face tingled once more and I swore I could feel something trickle down my face. Raising my hand which was holding me up I pressed against my face hissing softly. Wincing at the sharp pain that ran over my upper lip I looked at my hand and saw a small splodge of blood. My eyes widened instantly.

"What the hell?!" I shouted, not caring that Haddock could hear us. "You don't draw blood. Punching and kicking's fine as long as no blood. Did you forget mum's rules?" I asked, trying to hide the pain that ran through my face with every word.

"Ah, who cares, mum'll never find out. Unless you behave like a brat and snitch on me"

"I'm not a brat, I'm your bloody brother. And you don't draw blood. And FYI, I'm so telling mum!"

We fought for quite a while after that. Mostly verbal but the occasional punch was thrown. Her to me and vice versa. After we'd finished we were both laying on the ground. Propped against a tree opposite each other. I had to admit I was amazed that Lout hadn't woken up from all the noise we had made. Still, it was a little convenient.

This way she couldn't faint again.

I stretched out my leg, deliberately ignoring my sister, and kicked Lout's.

"Oi, wake up!" I hissed to her, continuously prodding her with my foot.

"Mummy, I don't wanna wear a suit" she mumbled in her sleep making me pause. Usually when I heard someone sleep talk, mainly Ruff, it was: 'Mum I don't wanna go to school'

Where the hell did that come from?!

"What?" I asked, more to myself than my annoyance of a sister but her pig friend answered.

"I don't wanna wear a suit, I wanna stay in bed"

"Oh, I don't think she's speaking properly" I laughed softly looking at Ruff "she's an idiot"

"Yeah, but she's fun to be around. Chasing Arden like a lost puppy, she keeps trying to flirt with him"

"And now Arden's got eyes for Haddock"

"What?!" I fell back against the ground in shock. Ok, I wasn't expecting that. Sally's awake, standing over me glaring down.

"Hiccup? Hiccup?! Did you just say my Arden has eyes for another girl?! Not even a girl, a tomboy!"

"Uh, yeah" I answered simply, and for the first time in my life I felt slightly intimidated. I wouldn't want to be Haddock. I'd never thought I could pity that girl.

"Where the hell is that, that...thing?!"

"Well, she and Arden went that way." I told her pointing towards the general direction of the couple. And the dragon that's not a dragon.

"Get up!" She ordered us and I stared at her wide eyed

"What?"

"Get up, we're going after those cheaters" before I could even think of stopping her she practically marched after them.

Pushing myself up of the floor I wiped the still somewhat damp blood from my face and grabbed my sister's hand.

"Come on, she's going to ruin everything"

"It's your fault idiot" she shot back but didn't say anything else letting me drag her, not caring anymore that I'd ruined her shirt.

Arden's POV

Much to my silent amazement we'd reached the shore and I stood just by the boundary of the tree line. Sarah was stood by the waves, shoes in hand as she let the water lap at her bare feet. She'd rolled her trousers up to her knees and reminded me very much of my younger cousin. She'd tried to persuade me to join her but I was on dragon watch. Keeping him back and trying to stop him from scorching the earth so he could bed down.

He reminded me of a cat most of the time, I couldn't help wondering if he had some relation to them. It wouldn't surprise me.

"Sarah, I think we should start finding him a home." I called out to her, tempted not to as she looked so relaxed.

"In a minute, I'm quite enjoying myself." She shouted back as she waded in deeper.

"You're a child, you know that?"

"I do, I'm eleven after all" I rolled my eyes at her response but didn't say anything more.

"Shut up and hu-"

"YOU CHEATER!"

I more than jumped at the screech jumping out the way as a fat body ran through, apparently trying to tackle me. My eyes followed the faceless blob as it ran for Sarah.

"Damn!" I ran after the thing not sure what the hell it was. It sounded human, but it didn't exactly look it. Thankfully the thing wasn't too fast due to its bulk and I was catching up quick. I threw myself onto it knocking the thing to the floor with a painful thud.

"Ow!" I heard a pained whine from beneath me and I glanced down at the face. That voice sounded familiar.

"Sally?!" I asked completely shocked, what the hell was she doing? And why wasn't Toothless over here? I turned away from the girl, raising my hand from holding her down into the dirt. My jaw dropped at what I saw. Toothless was stood on his back two feet holding back Tuff and Ruff with his hands and tail. They'd been backed into a tree and were ghostly white. "Toothless!" I shouted over making his head snap over. I shook mine to tell him no, hoping he'd understand.

It seemed he did as he dropped back onto his four legs, still cornering them with bared teeth, but not intent on killing them at the exact second.

Adrenaline was pumping through my body as I stared at my closest friend, bar Sarah, and his sister.

"What the hell are you doing here?!" I screamed at them as I pushed myself off the girl beneath me. I could see Sarah staring wide eyed, frozen in place. Running to her I grabbed hold of her hand. "Come on, we'll deal with this later. We need to get Toothless away before he snaps."

She shook her head, seeming to come back to reality.

"Right"

I glanced back at the dragon watching as he stalked ever closer to them.

"Toothless! Come here!" I shouted, and thankfully he did just that. Flicking away from them his tail whipping Tuff in the eye. A loud curse came from the twin as our Night Fury stopped before us, his teeth still bared. "I can't believe I'm going to do this but no chance am I having him killed"

Steeling myself I pushed her towards his back, helping her climb on and settle herself. Glancing at his tail fin I chewed on my lip and pulled myself onto his back too. Wrapping my arms around her waist to ensure she wouldn't fall off I leaned forwards so she could grab onto his scales.

"Toothless! Let's go" burying my face in her neck so I wouldn't have to look I cringed as I felt the solid being we were on lift. "Oh God"

****please read review****

33. Chapter 33

I didn't open my eyes as we took off, all I knew was that shouts were

getting quieter. I wasn't even thinking about if we'd get caught all I could think was:

'I'm going to die, I'm going to die, I'm going to die' in a continuous mantra. I could feel Sarah tense every now and again, I couldn't deny that I was worried for her but that didn't make me look up. She wasn't screaming, she was fine. I however was biting my lip to the point where blood was beginning to trickle into my mouth. The metallic taste it held bitter on my tongue.

"Arden!" She shouted over the rush of wind in my ears. I glanced up the side of her face, my head still wedged in her neck. "Look!" She instructed I hesitated for a moment before looking up a fraction. My head rising the rest of the way milliseconds later at the sight before me.

I had to admit it was completely breath taking, the clouds were tinged pink from the setting sun. Violets streaking the sky mixed with soft oranges. All fading into the creeping night sky. Stars were starting to speckle the sky the higher up we went. I knew this sight would be lost on those below. All they could do was stare at the setting sun, unable to watch the day and night battle it out for dominance.

Loosening my grip around her waist I hesitantly reached down, my fingertips just brushing the tops of the clouds. Cold bathed my skin as soon as I touched the seemingly soft clouds. My fingers slipped through the cloud and as soon as I brought them up they had small droplets of water on them. Clenching my fist I smiled softly. This wasn't as terrifying as it had previously been. Yes the tail was making me tense whenever I heard it creak but Toothless wasn't speeding up and I felt mostly calm.

"It's beautiful" she breathed and I could only nod in agreement.

"Yeah, it definitely is."

"Arden, I can see my house" I followed her pointed finger and could clearly see her overly large house. I smiled at seeing her grinning face.

"Yeah, you can, and I can see mine" I noted looking through another break in the clouds. It felt a little strange ignoring this landscape and house spotting but I wasn't complaining. I was enjoying my time with her.

"Toothless, up, I wanna go higher" I bit my lip to stop from protesting as he rose himself higher, breaking through the few clouds that were still above us. "You ok there Arden?" She asked back as I wrapped my arms back around her, a little looser than before.

"I suppose, though I do feel like screaming" I answered truthfully as I closed my eyes briefly. The clouds may be made of water but that didn't mean it was a normal feeling having them brush over your body.

"Alright, just making sure."

"Hey Sarah, this is amazing" I added, just so she knew I wasn't

completely terrified. Though I soon wished I'd kept my mouth shut as Toothless seemed to think now was a good time to do a slow motion backflip. It was almost impossible not to bite onto her shoulder to muffle a scream of fear. It wouldn't do to bite her when she was my life line. I had an image in my head of her losing her grip and both of us plummeting to the ground breaking our necks.

"Arden you're crushing my ribs." I flinched at hearing her.

"What? Oh sorry" I loosened my grip as soon as I could see the land below me and the sky above me.

"You know, I think we should do this again... Once he's got a saddle and we can fly him properly" she added the last part after a few moments. Apparently seeing that this could be quite a nice thing to do, if the threat of being flattened like a pancake wasn't as close to reality as it was.

"Yeah, probably." I agreed trying to keep my eyes focused on the sky and not the increasingly small buildings below.

I'd been so panicked with the threat of falling to my death that I hadn't even noticed the sun setting beyond the horizon and night beating day.

"Sarah?"

"Hmm?"

"I'm glad they interrupted us earlier."

"Yeah, me too."

"Do you think they'll tell?" I asked, glancing at the side of her face for any indication.

"I don't see why, Toothless would've killed them if it weren't for us. They're probably terrified."

"We should probably head back now. I don't think his tail will hold for that much longer."

"Alright, still Arden, don't you think it looks beautiful up here. They even lit the statues" I turned and smiled at seeing the creepy statues around our village. I never knew why they were there, just that they were unnerving. Though I must admit they were beautiful in the night sky.

"Yeah, I wonder why? They've never done that before"

"I don't kn-ah!" I screamed as the bloody dragon nosedived towards the sea.

"Toothless! What is wrong with you?! Bad dragon!" She screamed as she held on tighter to his flat scales. I could feel her ribs protest as I squeezed tighter to her, I was surprised I hadn't broken them with how tight I was holding. But he didn't seem to want to stop yet.

"Sarah, what the hell is he doing?!"

"I-I don't know, he's never been like this before. I-I don't know what's wrong with him"

"Sarah, let me get the hell off!" I screamed, my head now firmly wedged in her neck.

"Toothless, Toothless, stop!" She screamed but could do little to change his direction. She had practically no control over him.

"Toothless, you bloody dragon let me off!" I commanded, trying to find some authority in my voice, but all I got was a pathetic squeak.

"TOOTHLESS!" We both screeched as he reached the water's surface. I scrunched my eyes closed waiting for the cold spray before being immersed.

But it never happened.

As I reopened my eyes I saw we were following the current, his toes just brushing the slowly moving water. I stared bemused at the back of his head, sharing a confused look with Sarah.

"What the hell was that about?" I mumbled, more to myself than to her. But she still answered.

"I have no idea, but I know my life is now considerably shorter. And I swallowed a hell of a lot of bugs." I smirked at her answer releasing the pressure on her ribs and swearing I could hear them groan.

"Sorry" I apologised receiving nothing but a 'ok' from her.

I kept my eyes on Toothless, trying to work out what had happened to him. But before I could think too much on it the dark sky around me seemed to thicken.

"S-Sarah, where're we going?" I asked, covering my mouth as I coughed on whatever was in front of us.

"I don't know. Toothless let's go back" she told him, coughing too. He gave us a strange noise that sounded rather annoyed, but still. He did turn around. And thankfully it seemed we were going back home. Lifting slightly the background noise of toes skimming water vanished and we were plunged into silence.

I could hear nothing but my own heavy breaths. Seemed my heart hadn't quite recovered from the death ride that was Toothless. Settling my head on her shoulder I tried to force my breaths to even out. The beauty of the scenery no longer entrapped me.

It would be a long fly to solid ground.

I kissed the ground as soon as Toothless brushed against the earth. I was crouched on my hands and knees kissing the dirt ignoring the gravel and grass.

"Will you get up?" Sarah asked, feigning calmness though I could hear

relief in her voice and, from the corner of my eye, I could clearly see her holding a hand to her chest.

"No, I'm never getting on him again."

"Fine don't, just get up. They've gone if you haven't noticed and we still need to find Toothless a room for the night."

"You know, I don't think you quite understand just how terrifying that was." I pointed out, looking around at her, still crouched on the floor, resembling a praying man.

"I do Arden, I'm just saying Toothless not being found is more important."

"Why?" I challenged, I knew he was rare but that didn't mean I wasn't allowed a little time to stop myself having palpitations.

"Because he's endangered, people are trying to kill him. Not us"

"If we had died, he'd be killed"

"Well we're not dead" I forced myself to my feet, my hand over my heart.

"I know that, still I'd like a minute to calm myself." I don't know why I was getting so irate, maybe it was the adrenaline still pumping through my veins?

"You've had a minute" she argued back, and though I knew there was nothing to fight over it seemed we neither cared nor took the time to realise it.

"Well maybe I need another. Sorry, it's clearly my fault that I've almost been killed on that thing. It wasn't you, not at all"

"How's it my fault?" Sarah screamed at me, storming towards me and glaring hatefully.

"You're the one who's doing all this to me. Well know something? I don't care about him, or you!" I knew that was a blatant lie, still, I also knew it would hurt her terribly. She cared for Toothless, he was the first creature to ever make her feel like she had control over something. And I knew she had a crush on me.

And just as expected she didn't answer, just slapping me had across the face. Truth be told it wasn't that hard, I could have probably stopped it should I have wanted to. But I felt she needed it.

"Go away" she hissed, his voice cold and hard. Not letting my mask drop I simply glared back at her ignoring the small sting in my left cheek.

Without a word I left, a sickening feeling in my stomach telling me I'd made a stupid mistake.

****please read review****

Hiccup's POV

As I stared at his retreating form I felt tears prick my eyes. I wasn't sure why I was so emotional, I knew he didn't like me that way, but still it hurt. I guess because even though I knew I'd never date him I held onto the idea that we could be friends. It was a farfetched idea.

Jumping at the cold contact to my bare arm I snapped in the direction of the shock and saw a wide eyed Toothless. Placing a hand over my heart I breathed a heavy sigh of relief.

"T-Toothless, you scared me. Come on, let's go find you a home." I knew he could see I was hurt but he didn't press me. I was grateful for that, he had a way with looks that made me want to spill all my secrets to him.

Turning his back to me I followed after him, he had to choose what his home would be. I hardly took note of the grooves in the dirt that he'd caused earlier. Tucking my hair behind my ear as the wind picked up I could barely see him through the darkness. I could see the movement in the night that I guessed was him.

Following the flickering of his tail I could see the ground being glazed over with water in a slick motion.

"Don't go too far into the dark" I advised as I nearly bumped into him. "I didn't mean..." I trailed off, I could see the flicking of his ears. "Toothless?" I asked feeling panic well up in the pit of my stomach.

He made a strange sound, almost like a purr and hiss combined.

"What's wrong?" I asked, it sounded like something was bothering him. I wished I could understand dragon. Ard-no I'm not thinking about him. I mentally chastised myself. How would he know what to do? He doesn't care.

Shaking myself out of my stupor I saw he had ceased making that strange noise, now his head was flicking back and forth in what looked like a frantic search. For what? I had no idea.

"Toothless? Toothless, what's wrong?" I asked, shaking him softly. He just whipped at my leg making me stumble away from him. "Toothless?" Shaking his head at me I tried to follow his gaze, something far easier thought than done.

Looking into the darkness all I could see was clouds, but the more I focused the more I thought I could hear something. Maybe it was the wind, but I could have sworn I heard what sounded like the flapping of a hundred wings.

It was like a swarm of huge birds were overhead, flying just out of sight. My eyes scanned the night sky wishing it wasn't just the two of us. I had a horrid feeling in my stomach that whatever it was was dangerous.

"T-Toothless, c-can we get out of here now?" I whispered, inching

closer to him so he could protect me. He seemed to take the hint wrapping his tail around my waist but not halting in his strange sound. Now that I listened more closely it resembled more of a cat warning than anything else. Maybe whatever that swarm was was dangerous, maybe Toothless was afraid of them?

His hiss intensified and before I could comprehend the clouds punctures, a bullet like projectile shooting towards us. Screaming I was thrown off my feet by Toothless' tail against the back of my feet. Smacking my head against the ground I cringed but couldn't right myself as Toothless threw himself over me, standing above me like a brick wall. Wincing I didn't try to look past him, completely sure that he was doing what was best.

I cringed as I heard him screaming, hoping no one from the village could hear us. I didn't need more problems than I already had. He was screaming at something above us, something I couldn't see and was sure I didn't want to see. As I turned my head away screwing my eyes closed I jumped as dirt was thrown everywhere from a projectile smashing into the ground.

"Toothless?" I asked meekly as I pulled my legs to my chest holding myself into a ball with my arms. He growled in response. "Toothless, what's happening?" I shouted, knowing he couldn't answer but hoping it would prompt him to grab onto me and run away. Hopefully far far away from whatever was attacking us.

But he didn't. He held his position, digging his feet further into the dirt to hold himself still. Before I could comprehend what was happening streams of red cascaded down and around my shield, licking at my skin. It wasn't till I felt the intense heat that I realised fire was encompassing me. I screamed, but it was drowned out by a far larger far bigger one.

"Toothless! I want to leave!" I yelled, but I was trapped. But a moment later I wasn't. Blinking in surprise I looked around for Toothless, whoever was attacking wasn't attacking me anymore. And I could just see what I presumed was Toothless' back hunched over something. He was moving slightly on whatever he was fighting. But I knew for a fact that whatever it was was losing badly. I pushed myself up into a half seated slouch, staring at his back, wincing as I saw something splatter from Toothless' chew toy. Forcing myself to my feet I stumbled back, cringing as I heard a pained cry.

Backing up into a tree I jumped, my mind thinking that it was another of the things Toothless was keeping at bay. As soon as the bark scratched the back I relaxed. At least with this behind me I couldn't be attacked from behind. Hopefully.

I stayed glued to the wood watching as Toothless fought something. What it was I couldn't tell. I could see it was beginning to end from the slower movements, hopefully once he finished he'd run somewhere with me I could hide him then I could hide in my room.

As I was about to call for him once more something sliced through the back of my tree, the heavy oak splitting like a toothpick. Gasping I jumped away, fearing I'd be splattered. Spinning in my spot I backed up at the sight of large white fangs glistening in the moonlight. Stumbling backwards I tried not to take my eyes off the almost invisible creature.

"W-what?" Now that I could see what was attacking us it resembled one of the dragons I'd read about before. It hadn't registered with me before that if Toothless existed then others did too. I'd been deluded, thinking only Toothless was real. "T-Toothless, i-it's a-a..." I scanned my mind trying to find the names I'd seen just a few days prior. But I couldn't and settled for "dragon!"

His head snapped around at my cry, I could see through the corner of my eye that he'd dropped the now limp dragon from his mouth, charging over to protect me. Air rushed over my head as he leaped before me, the dragon stood in front shifting its attention from me to him. It snapped its teeth at us, its scaled head worming closer to us, smelling around us.

As soon as its head neared me Toothless snapped. His teeth scrapped the dragon's face, making him fall back, landing with a cry.

"W-what the hell kind of dragon is that thing?" I asked, gazing at the bluish creature, spikes plastered on its head looking a murky yellow in the darkness. I could only see part of it but, from what I could tell, he walked on his back legs.

He didn't answer, all he did was hunch his back looking like a cat about to strike out at an unaware mouse. But this wasn't a mouse, this was a dragon and whatever the hell kind it was, it was ready to fight too. Taking a few steps back I prayed that it was just these two.

"Toothless...kill it. Please" I begged and like a switch had been thrown he pounced.

Diving onto the dragon he pinned it down, his teeth glinting in the moonlight like long daggers. Gulping I stopped as my heels knocked against something hard and wet. Turning in my spot my eyes widened at the darkness shrouded dead dragon, blood covering it. I froze, it was like a nightmare. A terrible real nightmare.

Fighting the urge to run I backed from the mutilated carcass. Toothless was still fighting but thankfully winning, and I was frozen wishing I could be curled in my bed. I hadn't been home for so long, I wondered if my dad was even back. I hoped he was, I really needed someone doting on me.

I jumped at a soft contact against my leg, I turned to stare at what I thought was another dragon. Thankfully it was just Toothless.

"Toothless, you scared me" I admitted, leaning down to brush my hand across his head, his wide green eyes staring up at me. Smiling back at him I gained a gummy smile from him, his retracted teeth leaving bits of blood on his gums. "Can we get out of here? I'm sure I can find a place to hide you tonight. No chance am I staying around here any longer. And I'm not letting you fight anymore. They'll find you if you do."

He nodded, seeming to understand. Crouching down he offered me a ride, an offer I gladly accepted. Climbing on I settled myself, grabbing onto his grip-less scales. Just as I was beginning to gain a grip on him I yelped, my eyes wide at the sudden change from standing

to sprinting.

"Toothless!" I wasn't sure how many times I'd shouted that tonight but it must have been in the dozens. Keeping my mouth shut in case I was alerting someone to us I hunkered down on him. My head was pressed against the back of his body, his heartbeat ringing loud in my ears.

He ran through the forest, weaving through trees and jumping over fallen logs. My arms began to wind around his body to secure myself. His scales were far too slick for me to be able to hold on any other way. Burying my head in his back I screwed my eyes closed, no longer wanting to see where I'd die.

My plan more than backfired as I almost bit through my tongue trying to silence my screams as he seemed to jump randomly. I didn't open my eyes though, placing all my trust in the dragon who'd just saved my life.

****please read review****

35. Chapter 35

The journey felt immensely long but incredibly short at the same time. And by the time he halted I feared it was because we were dead. Inching open my eyes I could just barely see the edge of the forest. I breathed a sigh of relief, for two reasons. One, I was alive, two, he'd stopped before the village.

Sliding off his back I took a few moments to regain my footing, a task easier said than done as my muscles had turned to jelly.

"A-are you alright?" I asked, referring back to the scene back by the sea. He'd taken on two dragons, the names of which were lost on me, and he couldn't have come out unscathed.

He didn't answer, obviously, but he did give me a small nod.

"You sure?" Another nod. "Alright then, I can't see anyone so I think it's safe. Still, stay near me." I tried to think of any place that was large enough to hide a fire breathing dragon in them. A moment of genius hit me. "You can stay in the garage. My dad's away!" Smirking at my idea I crept forwards, trying to scan the area as I moved to ensure he wouldn't be seen.

I turned to look back at him, he'd stayed put, thankfully, but I couldn't turn my back to him. I kept thinking he's going to follow after me.

"Can you sit?" I asked, tilting my head to him. And he did. Breathing a sigh of relief I nodded in thanks moving with slightly more confidence. I'm not supposed to be out, but with the lack of sleeping at home it seems that I'm out more than in. At least I'd have my bed tonight. I've had enough of burnt grass and logs for pillows. Inching forwards I blocked out all tiny noises, knowing they'd do more harm than good to me.

I was sure if I was listening to every leaf rustle I'd become so paranoid I would be frozen. Now though, I was able to almost walk, I

was still spinning at every twig snap, but that was just Toothless settling down.

"Can you not" I whispered, seeing he was preparing to burn the ground. "We're not sleeping here." He rolled his eyes in a patronising manner. But I ignored him for the most part.

Weighing up my odds I turned to look back at him briefly. He seemed quite content with lying there, and with it being pitch black I could probably leave him and everyone would be no wiser he even existed. It was only his eyes that could be seen. Yet the possibility that he could be seen and could attack someone wouldn't leave my mind. Biting my lip I fought the urge to turn and whispered instead.

"Toothless, come with me."

Twigs snapped and leaves rustled as the giant creature stood and stretched. I could hear him plodding across the ground to reach me.

"A little quieter please Toothless" I begged, reaching behind to feel for his head. My hand connected with his scaly head and I patted it. Just to make sure it was there. My mind told me if I didn't he'd vaporise. Paranoia was really starting to eat at me.

Not removing my hand I led him through the, thankfully, large space between the houses. I kept applying slight pressure when he tried to pass me, I knew he was trying to be protective. But still, I had to keep him behind me so I could keep him under my control.

I was sure there'd be no dragons in the village, and if there were I'd be running in the opposite direction, so Toothless had nothing to worry about. I just wished I knew how to tell him that in the quietest voice possible while walking past houses filled with people who hated me. And would have no problem ratting me out to my dad as 'crazy'.

He let out a small sound, one I wasn't familiar with. It was a purr but not. I couldn't tell if it was good or bad. I halted, trying to detect the slightest sound. Nothing...snap. I stiffened, not moving so much as the muscles around my eyes. Snap. There it was again. Toothless growled, my hand clamping around his mouth, silencing him.

I could feel his gums indicating that he'd bared his teeth. But I couldn't feel any blood so he must have retracted them. I could only be grateful for that. The snaps were coming again, they sounded closer, and the final one was just around the corner of the nearest house.

Half a head poked out, and my blood ran cold. I couldn't see who it was, but I was sure it couldn't be anything good.

Was it a hunter?!

"Toothless, Toothless attack" I hissed, hoping he'd scare off whoever it was. Though I hoped it wasn't a school kid and they'd be scarred for life. Though that would make things easier. I shook my head, no I couldn't scar someone.

He didn't respond to my pushing, he just stayed there, staring up at me bemused. Why was he confused? Who was it?

"Sarah?" A familiar voice asked, though I was so nervous I stiffened letting out a gasp. "What the hell are you doing here? And why bring Toothless? Go away, you're scaring my mum, she thought we were being robbed."

I deflated again, great, just who I didn't want to see. I would have much preferred scarring someone.

"Arden, go away. I thought you were a hunter! Go back inside. I'm taking him away." I brought up my best cold façade. And hopefully it wasn't as obvious to him that it was fake as it was to me. Just for good measure though I added a glare.

"Whatever, I'm moving from our seat in English. See ya later Hiccup" he didn't even bother giving me a wave turning his back on me and leaving my jaw hanging open.

I wanted to say something, anything, but I couldn't. He'd called me Hiccup.

How did this happen?

Glaring at the spot where he'd once been I turned my back on the vacant space. Dragging Toothless with me.

I knew I couldn't really drag Toothless, but he spared my pride by letting me pull him along. Seemed he could understand when something was important to me, thankfully he stayed quiet and didn't try to pull me back to Arden.

"God, I hate him. How the hell did I let myself like him?" I was seething, and, I admit, it may have been a little over the top, but still I was hurt. I had liked him for so long and I thought he was starting to like me. But no, boys make no sense and do a 180 on you. I hate him.

Toothless brushed up against my hand, trying to gain my attention. Staring down at him I saw his eyes were wide.

"I'm fine, don't worry about me." I assured, patting his head softly. At least some boys still made relative sense. That's implying he's a boy. For all we-I know he's a girl. "You're a boy aren't you Toothless?" I asked, just making sure. But from the tilt of his head I'd sounded like I was insane.

Thankfully though, he nodded his head. I kept my mouth shut after that, knowing that it'd be best if we stayed quiet.

We weaved through the houses, both of us silent. Thankfully the lights were off in most, the curfew in strong effect. That or it was far later than I thought it was.

My house was starting to near us, and I sighed in relief at the lack of light. My dad always stayed up late, he was late to bed early to rise. At least this meant I hadn't missed his return, there'd be a village wide search otherwise.

As we continued to walk, my house growing larger by the step I felt my hand pass through air. Strange, Toothless' head should have been there. Turning in my spot I saw Toothless frozen, his teeth bared and a hissing noise filling the air.

"Toothless! Stop it!" I hissed back, running over to quieten him. But he didn't stop. He just hunched over more. "Toothless?" Was it me? Was he hissing at me? No, that couldn't be right, why'd he be doing that?

Turning I saw what it was, it wasn't me, rather where I was going. A light had flicked on in one of the windows. The person inside visible for all to see. It wasn't my dad.

It was a hunter.

My breath caught in my throat, a hunter? What the hell were they doing? Why were they in my house? Another figure joined the scarred hunter. A burly man with a long beard platted.

Of course, that was my dad.

"We need another plan" I stated, earning a blow of air from my dragon. It was his equivalent of rolling his eyes. "Don't. Honestly Toothless, this is going to be bad. Let's...let's...oh! I know! We'll hide in Gobber's house. He never going into his garden and he has no neighbours, you can be in the back and I'll sleep in the garage. It'll be perfect." I smirked at my on the spot plan. I loved my on the spot moments of eureka. They were few and far between but they did happen.

No one ever listened but they existed.

Tapping his shoulder I led him away from my house, infested with hunters, towards the hopefully safer world of Gobber's home. Walking quiet and close to my dragon, my only lasting friend I ignored the eyes staring at me from Arden's home. I knew it was him so felt no reason to worry. But I couldn't find it in me to turn to him. He snapped at me, why? I don't know. So, until he apologises and grovels like a child I'm not speaking to him. Not in the slightest.

I hope he feels guilty.

****please read review****

36. Chapter 36

The rest of our walk passed in silence, neither of us wanting to break it. It was far too nice to pass up, and we both needed thinking space. Well, I know I did. Everything was a jumble. Dad was home and there was no search, that was unheard of. Hunters were in our home poisoning his mind with who knows what. And Arden was being horrid. What was happening to my world? Everything was perfect and now it's falling to pieces.

I didn't know what I'd be doing anymore. I loved spending time with him, I thought it was the same for him. I don't know how this happened. Such a stupid fight. Toothless nudged at my hand making me jump, I must have dropped into the back of my mind. Smiling I stared

down at my dragon, hoping I didn't look quite as depressed as I felt. He gave me knowing eyes, the kind you receive from your parents when they know you're keeping something from them.

"It's nothing, honestly. It's nothing important." I could hear the lie in my own words, and I knew he was too smart to fall for it. But he did let it drop. Something I was very thankful for.

Gobber's house was starting to near, the smoke from the fire inside starting to thin from the chimney. A clear sign he was fast asleep. He never let the fire die down, his house was drafty and the lack of fire made it bitterly cold. I had always asked him why not fix it, he could, he was very good with his hands. But he always had the same answer. 'Let it be, don't change what's happened just make it better'. I never understood that. I always put it down to laziness. That and he'd rather gossip with my dad. Manly gossiping of course.

"We're almost there" I noted the obvious, just so it wouldn't sound awkward when I spoke. "I need you to stay quiet for me, don't talk to anyone, stay quiet. I can't have Gobber find out about you. It'd give him a heart attack and kill my dad." I could see him laugh at that. Could dragons laugh? They must be able to. I hoped it wasn't at my dad dying and just the image of people from this village, he must have known the general size of everyone, being scared witless. "Don't. Come on" I motioned him to follow me as I finally reached Gobber's practically hand built home.

The old man's snore could be heard from outside, how his neighbours slept was over my head. They must get used to it, that or ear plugs. I never had though. He was so loud the tiles on the roof shook.

Moving over to the windows, the curtains open, I glanced in. And sure enough, Gobber was laid out on his arm chair a pint of what I presumed was ale by his side. His mouth was hanging open, his stone tooth shifting in his mouth. I never understood how he could sleep soundly when his tooth constantly fell from his mouth. I couldn't fathom how he could sleep knowing he could wake up with no tooth, it having been swallowed in the night.

Oh well. He's out cold and that's all I care about.

Tiptoeing back to the waiting dragon I motioned for him to go around back. I didn't want to risk waking Gobber up, and though I believed it impossible, I vowed to keep speaking to a minimum. We seemed to be on the same train of thought as he just nodded, not making a, I presume, pointless noise like he usually does. We both crept around the back of the house, the house may have been well made at a time, but the garden was overgrown. Weeds stuck up from cracks in concrete. Grass that surrounded the garage at the bottom of the garden was beginning to peak through cracks in the windows.

I didn't know why he had a garage. He didn't have a car.

Pushing that thought from my mind I decided to take it as a blessing. Toothless could use it as a home, and if there was enough space maybe I could too. I hadn't eaten anything for a while, but hunger was the last thing on my mind. At least I wanted it to be, all I could think of was Arden sitting at home with a warm meal before him. My poor,

neglected, stomach growled at my mind's taunting. The growling was as loud as an earthquake as painful as one too.

Toothless nuzzled against me, staring up at my tired face with concerned eyes.

"I'm fine" I whispered, my voice barely above a whisper. So quiet it was almost inaudible. Thankfully he heard and I didn't have to repeat myself. All I wanted was to hide him possibly have something to eat and have a lot of sleep. Probably go to school tomorrow, but I don't even know what day it is anymore. Ushering him over to the dilapidated shed like garage I tried not to scrunch my face in disgust. It smelt.

The stench of oil and rotting wood filled my nose, making me want to gag. Raw fish was better than this. The lock was rusted and, like everything else he owned, wasn't locked. He never bothered with them. I used to chastise him for it, now I couldn't be more grateful.

He made a short noise to grab my attention making me jump two feet into the air and spin. Facing him I tilted my head in confusion. I didn't want to talk, I didn't want to risk it. But I was so curious. What could he want?

He motioned with his head towards the house, and it was then that my heart stopped for what must have been the millionth time.

A light was on.

My eyes widened considerably.

"Damn, damn. How did he hear us? We were silent!" I panicked as quietly as I could. He was by the kitchen window, and thankfully he'd changed the curtain. Something I'd hassled him about for months. To one that actually closed.

Toothless gave a half-hearted grunt, and that terrified me. If he was awake from us being silent he'd hear that. Right? I clamped my hand over the dragon's mouth, silencing him completely. I watched with baited breath as Gobber dragged himself around the kitchen. Oblivious to us so far, I could see the shadow of the fridge being opened, and him disappearing for a few milliseconds.

Forcing myself to take a few deep calming breaths I moved closer to the garage, not caring that I'd most likely be covered in flakes of old paint. The garage had a large overhang, some of the tiles and wood falling down, it didn't make it the safest hiding place but it did offer cover from his outside light, if he checked all he'd see was some shadows. And hopefully he wouldn't investigate.

I couldn't see what he was doing, his shadow was slouched against the kitchen counter, his back to me. If anything it made me more nervous. I almost wanted him to see me, as strange as that sounds, just so my fear of being caught could dissipate.

Toothless nudged at my hand, trying to urge me to continue with whatever he thought I was doing, but I couldn't. I had to wait for Gobber to leave, if I didn't we'd be damned. I could see it now, I'm fiddling with the lock, a light passes around the garden just catching Toothless' eyes making them shine like jade. Gobber comes

screaming out to investigate and Toothless attacks, thinking he's protecting me. I could already feel the blood on my skin.

I jumped as the cold feeling finally registered my back slamming against the wood of the garage in a very painful way. It wasn't till I glanced down that I saw Toothless staring up at me, his head tilted to the side. I was getting far too jumpy, I was lucky I'd only hit a side panel of wood, anything else would have given off a much greater sound.

A string of curses flew from behind the curtains of Gobber's house, the old man inside stumbling about. I wasn't sure what was happening but I hoped it was good, maybe he was going back to bed. I could only hope. Holding a hand up to silence the dragon I listened intently for what was coming from his mouth.

"Bloody rats, eatin' through m' leg. I'm poison them little things" I was glad he'd ceased his swearing, his had a sailor's mouth. "Ah, I'm gonna have to fix this, less I get a new un. I swear, the little bleeders ain't gonna see tomorrow." The sound of stomping feet filled the air as Gobber's shadow shrunk into the light. A light which soon vanished.

It wasn't till the sound of heavy snores that shook the house once more pierced the night sky before I breathed a sigh of relief. We weren't caught. Patting my dragon's head in as calming a way I could, I turned back to the lock. It was a normal lock in all sense of the word, relatively easy to open. The only problem being that I wasn't a lock picker. Turning to look at him I motioned to the lock with the corner of my eye. Hoping he'd catch on.

His eyes squinted in confusion before he nodded. Stepping to the side I gave him as much room as I could without potentially revealing me. Opening his mouth gas formed in the back of his throat hissing filling the silent night air and it wasn't till my hand clamped on did it fall quiet once more.

"No fire" I whispered quietly. "It'll wake him up" the dragon rolled his eyes as he shook his head, gas spilling from the corners of his mouth and evaporating into the sky. It was strange seeing the remnants of what would have been an explosion floating up lackadaisically looking as dangerous as...me. Insisting he find something else he pulled away weighing up his odds.

Before I could even question what he might do his claws slashed down, slicing through the lock as though it were paper. I stared with wide eyes as the old lock dropped, half one way half the other. I almost wanted to chastise him for doing that before I could think of anything but another, my tired side, was just happy that it was open. The air was getting chilly and I wanted nothing more than to curl up beside something warm.

Grabbing onto the handles that were now free I pulled them back, with much difficulty. Everything my father and Gobber seemed to have always weighed a ton. I believe it's a conspiracy, they're trying to give me muscle. Something that's an impossible feat.

"Come on" I mouthed, managing to open the door enough to slip my body through. He followed after, turning his head sideways as he tried to follow through. But it seemed his body was far too big. He managed to

get his head and one of his arms through. But that was it, any more and he was sure to bang something and alert Gobber to the two intruders in his garden. As he moved to push his arm through I grabbed hold of him. Steadying him as best I could.

"Hold on, you're too big." I warned, forcing myself against the inside of the door, willing it to open. It did, and to my horror it groaned in response. As soon as he was big enough to fit through I stepped back, letting him waddle in and praying to the Gods above that Gobber hadn't heard.

When no light came on I took it as a good sign and proceeded to yank the doors back closed, wanting only a sliver of moonlight to pass through. The sound of crunching reached my ears and in the dismal light it sounded so much louder than what it really must have been. Turning I could barely see Toothless' jade eyes shining in the silver glow. He was bedding down. Not a bad option.

The day's stress had finally caught up to me as my eyelids grew heavy. Dropping to the ground I tried to get as close to the dragon as possible without waking him. But he did extend his wing out to cover me, pulling me back so I could rest my head against his neck.

"Thank you Toothless. Goodnight."

****please read review****

37. Chapter 37

The sun peeked through the fractured window on the side of the garage stabbing me in the eye and rousing me from my much needed and much deserved sleep. Shifting under the heavy wing draped over my shoulder I buried my head in the dragon's side. Hoping he'd maybe block out the rising sun.

The sleek black reptile shifted, cracking open a catlike eye the bright jade startling on the midnight black scales. Huffing out a puff of air to try and convey his annoyance at having his sleep disturbed he shuffled to the side, blocking out the sun but also removing my pillow.

"Good morning Toothless" I greeted, shaking my head to try and resetttle my hair. I knew it was stuck out like a porcupine but I didn't care. He was a dragon, what did he care about how I looked? As long as I fed him he was a happy lad.

Giving me a small nod and grunt in what I presumed was a 'good morning' he pushed himself up, stretching like the multitude of cats I'd seen in the village. It never ceases to amuse me how innocent he looks when he lets his guard down and behaves, even slightly, like the child I presume he is. I don't think Toothless is old. He's far too accepting of humans to be old. Then again I don't know about other dragons. But, I suppose if they're forced to fight against hunters they can't be very trusting.

Pulling open the very heavy door a fraction my eyes landed on the house, I was scanning every window for signs of life, nothing. We seemed to be in the clear. I couldn't hear much around us suggesting

others were either still in bed or passed out. Either way, they weren't outside. Staring back at the dragon he'd finished stretching and was staring at me curiously. I nodded, indicating that it was safe. He tiptoed after me as I took a few tentative steps out.

The birds in the sky flew across, hiding behind the small clouds they were dotted about. I wasn't sure but I could almost guarantee that it was half six. Far too early for anyone here to be getting up.

We crept across the garden, each of us scanning the surroundings as though we were robbers. In all honesty I would rather that be the case, then I wouldn't have a dragon following me.

I didn't know what we were doing, I could admit that much. But I was stressing about what I should do. And that's send him somewhere safe and forget about him for a few hours so I could go to school. I never thought I'd want to spend my time in that prison. But I did.

I didn't know what I could do. I couldn't hide him in the cove, I couldn't hide him in my house. And I definitely couldn't leave him here. I felt like pulling my hair out, I wanted to rag it from its roots, just so I could vent my frustrations.

A thought crossed my mind as I looked to the sky. If we got high enough he'd look like a bird. It was a risk and the stick still jammed in his tail would probably hold for a long time at low altitude, but high? I wasn't so sure. I'd have to get things sorted soon. A saddle and preferably something to connect the tail and the saddle. I don't like the thought of placing my life in that of a dead branch.

"Toothless, I have an idea. And it involves a little flying." His ears perked up at the mere mention of that word and I was almost swept off my feet as he lunged forwards. Placing my hands on his head I forced him to stand, four feet on the ground. He wasn't helping with my nervousness. "Alright, come on. And quietly."

Moving around his side I threw a quick glance to the tail and a much longer and cautious look around. I placed my hands flat against the slick scales dragging myself up and swinging myself over. I relied heavily on my horse riding background for this. Because, while he was smaller than a horse he was a lot more wriggly. He seemed insistent on staying on the ground, but I was sure that was a combination of anxiety of the hunters we'd both seen and excitement at being somewhat free again.

It was strange. I can't think of any other way to describe it.

"Alright come on" clapping my hands together, and instantly flinching, I tried once more to climb on. Hoping he'd settle down. I must have tried at least four times before my leg stuck. Cheering to myself I dragged my body up, flopping down on his back with a pained hiss as his scales were much harder than they appeared. Placing my hand on his back to keep him still I threw one more look around.

Silence.

"Let's go." I whispered, and not a moment later his wings expanded

and he catapulted into the air.

I don't know if I screamed. Honestly I wouldn't be surprised if I did but he flew so fast and so high into the sky that my screams were trapped in the back of my throat. We were thrown vertically my body being dragged back and my arms wrapping around his neck to try and stay on.

Thankfully he straightened out, and my screams became tangible. He threw me an incredulous look that made me shift a little uncomfortably as I silenced my screams. The back of my throat burned as I hesitantly took a hand off his back to rub at it.

"Sorry" I croaked out, instantly covering my mouth as thousands of tiny bugs assaulted my face.

A ribbon of clouds below blocked my view of the miniaturised land below and I released a long breath of relief. Thank God we were that high. Now we really did look like birds.

Wind blew my hair back, the short strands ticking the base of my neck. A shiver ran through me, both from the freezing altitude and the tickle I was receiving making it impossible to suppress it. Throwing a glance over my shoulder I stared at the tail, the light leather and stick looking very out of place on the midnight black dragon.

I was tempted to make us rise some more. To pass through the sparse ones above and ensure no one could even contemplate dragon. But I decided against it.

I liked my life. Contrary to my past beliefs.

Hunkering down on his back I clung to him like a baby monkey, letting him take control and hopefully guide me to safety.

Arden's POV

I sat at my desk at school, teachers glared at my front and Sally glared at my back. I tried to stifle the uncomfortable shifts that I was making every few minutes. I was usually a confident boy, but, now I was feeling incredibly awkward.

"Arden. You disappear for days and you have the gall to ignore me." My teacher snapped making my head jar up painfully.

"What? No I wasn't." I defended, though we both knew the truth.

"Then what was I saying?" He pressed, I hated when teachers did that. Knowing you haven't got the answer just to embarrass you.

"I don't know Sir." I answered truthfully, I was having a hard enough time as it was without him making it worse. I was so confused. Sarah, I-I don't know what to do with her. I liked her, but, I guess I kinda overreacted. But can you blame me? I could've died. I know I didn't, and I know she could have too. But, she could've at least tried to be a little more supportive. I wasn't good with heights thanks to Toothless.

"Then pay attention." He snapped turning back to say something with the rest of the class. I couldn't remember his name, not what lesson he taught. I don't even know if I've seen him before. but I do know I don't like him.

Slumping down on my hand I suppressed a heavy sigh. God damn it, I just wanted to go home. Actually, I just wanted to be back with Sarah. As strange as it sounds even to my own ears I wanted to be back with her. I wanted to help Toothless. And it amazed me.

Not a week prior I hated her, I didn't even want to sit beside her. But now, I was starting to like her. Like like her.

"Mr Hofferson. I'm one step away from giving you detention." Snapping my head around I stared up at him, my brows furrowing in confusion. Didn't he have more important things to do than pick on me?

"Sorry Sir." I mumbled, resting on my hand. I stared at the board, watching as he scribbled on some numbers and X's. Apparently this was maths.

Staring down at the closed new book before me I flipped through. Looking at all the strange squares on the paper. I never understood why we had weird paper. Surely we could figure it out on our own. I know my thoughts are insane and make little to no sense. But I couldn't be bothered listening to Mr what's his name. I didn't care. He didn't like me and I didn't like him. We barely knew each other's names.

"Mr Hofferson." He started, but as he paused for my attention I snapped.

"What? What the hell do you want? Just shut the hell up. I don't care."

"Outside."

"Gladly." Grabbing my bag I pushed myself to my feet and swung it over my shoulder. I could hear snickering as I walked through the tables and pushed open the heavy door. I threw the teacher a glare as I slammed it closed behind me. I could hear him through the door. He was ordering the class to calm down, though his relief was palpable.

Glaring at him through the door I didn't stand and wait for a verbal beating like all the other children, I pulled my bag higher and stalked off. If he saw me, which I'm sure he did, I bet he was more relieved that I had decided to leave.

I wasn't sure where I was going but I did know I was going to leave school. And I'd find Sarah.

I walked out of school my head down and not caring who saw me. Pulling out my phone to call someone I pressed a few buttons staring at it bewildered as water swam behind the screen. Throwing it to the ground I growled in annoyance. Great, it was broken. How didn't I figure that out earlier?

Unsure on my own question I stuffed it back into my pocket. I'd have to figure some way to get it fixed. I don't think the insurance

covers drowning by dragon.

Glancing back at the school once more I took off running. Unable to quell the feeling that there was something missing. Or someone.

****please read review****

38. Chapter 38

Hiccup's POV

We were flying over the village, having dropped down with the lower cloud coverage. The school was directly below us and I couldn't help glancing inside hoping I could perhaps catch a look at Arden. I wasn't mad at him, honestly, now I just miss him. It's not the same without him here to talk to. He could babble about anything and I wouldn't care. I just wanted him to be here.

I couldn't see him, and was more than disappointed. I wanted to see him, I wanted to swoop down on my unstable dragon and sweep him off his feet like I was Princess Charming. I don't think he'll be in school, I wouldn't if I was him. But that didn't narrow down my options. The woods? I'm not sure. My house? No, he wouldn't be dumb enough to go there during school time. Besides, my dad's overprotectiveness was legendary. No one tried to talk to me without his seal of approval. Which wasn't exactly coveted.

"Come on Toothless, drop me a little lower." I knew it was stupid but we had to try something. Wincing as the clouds rubbed against my face, it was strange it was like water being brushed on me, I wafted it away, trying desperately to balance. I desperately needed to make him a saddle. And something to keep his tail open. I didn't trust that stick. Especially when said stick was wedged on a fire breathing dragon

Holding back onto him my nails dug slightly on the slick scales, trying to find some grip. I hunkered down on his back, the people below no longer looked like insignificant specs, they were becoming ants. And that meant we looked far too big to be a bird. I contemplated sending us back up but with the sun on our backs we'd be hard to discern. I could only pray that the sun wouldn't dip. Berk's weather was unpredictable. The sun could drop at the slightest thing.

A loud groan from Toothless made my head snap down. What was that? Staring at him I tried to keep an eye on him and an eye on the ground.

"Toothless, what's wrong?" I begged, leaning closer to his back to try and gain anything from him. His eyes flitted across the ground beneath us and I desperately tried to follow him. But I had no idea what to look for. We were starting to move away from the village, hovering over the mass expansion of forest. "Toothless!" I insisted, hoping he'd give me even a small clue.

And as his mouth opened, I expected some form of answer. A pained yelp shot out and I found myself pinned against him. A crushing weight holding me down. Crying out in pain I could feel the wind

rushing through my hair, we were dropping like a sack of potatoes. And I didn't know why.

Turning to look behind me I could see strips of brown on my back.

"Toothless! What's happening?" I screamed, trying desperately to turn. From the corner of my eye I could see his wings were no longer there. What was happening?

His mouth was wide, a cry that was trying to escape being forced to the back of his throat. Letting myself be stuck back against his back I tried to see what was making us drop. My eyes drew to the ropes dangling in front of us. Large crudely shaped rocks were strapped to the ropes, keeping us tied together.

A gasp tried to flee my mouth as I saw that. Someone could see us. And they knew what we were. Hunters! My eyes grew wide, no longer caring about the earth speeding towards us I grasped onto Toothless. The hunters! No, that couldn't be right. They couldn't have found us. How?

The tops of the trees neared frighteningly quickly and I slammed my eyes shut as I awaited the blow.

Not a second later something hard whipped at my face, I cried out in pain, a cold substance running down my cheek. Wincing at the pain I tucked my face in the corner of his neck. I could feel his tail beginning to give out on us. My heart rate picking up quickly. I was going to die. I was going to die.

If his tail broke there was no chance of us escaping. He cried out in pain as we fell through the trees, branches snapping against us and causing a great deal of pain. I could hear him crying in fear and wanted more than anything to reassure him but every time I opened my mouth a cry came out.

Clinging to him desperately I pulled my legs up as much as the ropes tying me down would allow. Cracking open my eyes I could barely see past his neck but I could see the ground inches away, and before I could register what was happening a sharp pain ran through me as we both cried out in pain. Dust flying up and blinding me.

We skidded across the ground, stones and sticks littering the ground flew up and cut at my legs making me wince in pain. I held onto Toothless desperately as we started to slow down and as I had a few seconds to think I tried to come up with some way of freeing us before the hunters found us.

I could feel the rocks beneath us pulling at the cords binding me to him, and every stone tugged at the ropes a little, loosening them a hairs breadth.

My thoughts were jarred by a searing pain and a sharp cry in my ear. As I looked up I was greeted with the sight of a broken tree's bark.

"Toothless? Are you alright?" He couldn't answer, I knew that, but I had to ask. Moving my arm, which was thankfully free despite our awkward crash landing I scraped my fingers across the dirt trying to

find a stone of some sort. The tugging on the ropes has triggered a plan in my mind. If I could cut through the ropes, just like Arden, he'd be free and I would too. There was nothing of substance that I could find, just a few small stones and none that were sharp enough. Picking up a few I ran my thumb over them, pulling them close enough to my face to allow me to see what they looked like. They weren't very good but the largest of them was by best chance of getting us out. If I was honest with myself I had no right being picky in this situation. Dropping the too small ones I gripped the largest of the pack and started to cut the ropes.

I couldn't hear any footsteps. Whether my erratic heartbeat was drowning it out or they were too far away to be heard I didn't know. Honestly, I hoped for the latter.

Running the stone across the rope quickly I swallowed my breath unable to hear anything. I could hear Toothless though, I could hear his pained whines and it made me all the more desperate to free us.

He'd skidded across the ground, I wouldn't be surprised if he'd damaged a few scales in the process.

The rope was beginning to thin, small threads sticking off and with every stroke of my hand. The sharp edges were beginning to jab into my hand and I found myself cursing the fact that I didn't have a knife. This would have been so much easier had I. But I didn't slow down, the rope was beginning to break and we'd be out before Toothless became a captive.

I don't know what those hunters are up to or what they've told my dad but I did know I didn't want to find out. A small groove was starting to form in the rope, and a smile tugged at my lips. I was almost there. I was going to free him. I had to.

Despite it only being a small step I could already feel my legs being lighter, the ropes not holding onto me so tightly. I could hear a small whine from Toothless, I'm sure he can feel me starting to free us and I didn't know if it was a whine of pain or one of excitement. I hoped excitement because I definitely was.

I pulled on my legs as I cut the rope, blood starting to refill them. I hadn't even noticed they were falling asleep.

"Toothless, you're gonna have to help me. Try and at least roll onto your stomach." I didn't know the state of his legs, for all I knew they could be free or they could be clamped to his stomach. The back of his head nodded and he tried to shift. He rolled onto his stomach freeing me from the tree. My shoulder ached from the pressure released by the tree but I didn't stop trying to free us.

My mind told me I only had a little while to free us before the hunters found us and I wasn't going to waste it relishing in the blood refilling me.

My hands were turning red as I scraped at the rope, they were halfway there now and if I'd been stronger I may have been able to snap the rope. Damn I hate my body sometimes, I really should have taken up weight training like dad said.

"Just a little longer Toothless. Just be a little more patient."

He gave a small groan, I knew he was getting irritated and honestly I didn't blame him. I wanted to get out of here. I froze as the sound of a branch breaking sounded behind me. We both froze, and I moved my hand slightly onto Toothless' back to try and calm him. I could feel his breathing hitch.

I wasn't sure why but I did know that it wasn't for the same reason as mine did. Mine was fear, his, for all I knew it was him preparing to blow fire. That thought made me stare at the back of his head worriedly. Please don't blow fire. I willed him not to, hoping I could form some kind of understanding between us.

Another branch snapped and I hunkered down on his back. Thinking that somehow that made me invisible. As though someone would overlook a huge fire breathing reptile.

A hand settled on my back and I swallowed a scream.

"Hey stranger, what're you doin' here?" My eyes widened, I knew that voice.

"Arden?"

"Hey, what're you doin'? You seem a little tied up." I wanted to groan but I was just so glad he was here. He could get us out.

"Can you help us? We think hunters are coming."

"Oh they are. I saw them lookin' for something. I guess they're looking for you."

"Then help us." My voice sounded annoyingly pleading but I didn't care. I wasn't about to get Toothless caught again.

"Ok, what're you doin'?" Jumping as his voice was far closer than I remember I shifted under the bindings, the stone I'd been using falling from my hand.

"Trying to escape. Unlike you I don't carry knives."

"One time. And it was helpful wasn't it?" Rolling my eyes I stayed quiet, we didn't need the hunters following our voice. He walked beside me, grabbing the rope I'd been cutting and pulling hard on it. The frays burst and it tore. I felt anger rise in my chest at the fact that he could break it with his hands and I had to cut it.

He threw the rope away from me and took my waist pulling me back and off him. I landed with a slight thud holding onto his shoulder so I wouldn't fall. A smile spread across my face, and as I went to free Toothless there was another branch snapping. An alien voice following soon after.

"Well, well, well, what do we have here?"

****Please read review****

I turned stiffly, looking at Arden who was no longer beside me but in the grasp of one of the larger hunters, a knife in his hand, holding it to Arden's throat. My stomach knotted, what were they going to do? Were they going to kill us for taking Toothless?

I couldn't move, my feet were frozen to the floor. The hunter laughed, a deep throaty laugh that sounded like he hadn't drank in days.

"Well?" He asked, clearly referring to his previous question. But my tongue tied, words drying out and leaving me before they could form. A strange strangled noise left me, making the hunter laugh all the more. I blushed.

"Sarah, run!" Arden snapped, sounding strangely angry. Why that was I had no idea.

"I-I can't. I can't just leave you. I-I uh, Toothless?" It was a stupid thought, he was bound he couldn't save us. And we couldn't save him. We'd failed. Sooner than I thought.

"He'll be fine and so will I. They won't kill me. I hope. Just run, find someone, anyone. Ok?" He sounded very stern, but I could hear a slight waver underneath.

"Don't sound so confident kid, we might not hurt you but we need to know what you know. Torture isn't off the table." Their grins spread, rotten yellow teeth revealing themselves. Missing teeth dotted around their diseased gums. He glared at the before shifting his eyes to me.

"Sarah, leave, I'll be fine."

I stood my ground, the hunters weren't going after me, presumably thinking I wasn't a threat, or they thought Arden knew everything and I'd be an inconvenience. But, as I turned to stare at Toothless I jumped at a sharp foreign noise behind me. Spinning back around I stared at something I'd never seen but knew very well. A gun.

My jaw dropped, and so did Arden's. They had a gun? They really might kill us.

I could hear a scraping behind me but ignored it, whatever it was it couldn't be worse than having a gun pointed at my face.

"We can't let you get away. Who knows who you'd tell?"

"Let her go!" Arden piped up, clearly ignoring them. "No one would listen, trust me. They wouldn't believe her. She's always making up crazy stories. Just let her go, I'll tell you everything. Honest."

The man seemed to consider it, surprisingly enough, pressing the barrel of the gun against his chin. I jumped almost invisibly as something brushed past my leg, looking down I saw a black scaly foot, rope hanging off it.

It was loose? I thought, once I realised it was Toothless. Looks like that rope had been quite important. I smiled silently, keeping it

discrete. Maybe, even if we couldn't get out he could.

"I don't think so." The hunter finally answered, taking the gun from his chin and levelling it on me. "Can never be too careful, right?"

I stumbled back, fear welling up inside me and making my muscles stiffen, as though I was becoming a statue.

I could hear a soft scraping beside me, but it was mostly drowned out by the pounding of my heart against my ribcage.

The man waved the gun at me, making me flinch. I tried to step back but the loose rope made me stumble, my hand landing on his smooth scales.

"Careful lass, wouldn't want me to slip." I didn't know how me falling affected him but I wasn't willing to test him. He seemed unstable at best. Hunting mythical beasts and pointing guns at children.

"Will you stop? She's not going to do anything." They weren't moving, if anything they dug their heels in more, I could see him thinking and as I was about to speak he beat me to it. "I'll bet my life on it!"

A sly smirk grew across the hunter's face, the gun shifting from me and landing on him. And though I was shocked and worried for that idiot I couldn't suppress the long sigh of relief that I wasn't going to be killed where I stood.

"Are you sure lad? If she tells a soul you're meeting the big man up there."

"I trust her."

He let out a horrid laugh, his subordinates standing back and staring at him shocked. I guess this wasn't a natural occurrence with them. They probably didn't let many people go. And that thought scared me all the more.

I wanted to run forwards and grab him, pull Arden away from them and sprint away hopefully with Toothless close behind. But I didn't know how to do that and for us to survive. And I wasn't risking him.

"This is a little odd." The man mused, still not seeming completely convinced that I should be let go.

"Sir, I must object, we can't let her go." One of the younger hunters, shadowed by the man with the gun, spoke up. Making me jump and glare at him.

"I suppose you may be right." My heart sank as he levelled the gun on me. I could see him squeeze the trigger and flinched, Arden struggling in the hunter's grip. But he couldn't break free, all the other hunters were holding him tight.

"Wait!" I tried, but he ignored me, smirking wide.

"Say goodbye to your girlfriend laddie." He taunted, my life flashed before my eyes, and surprisingly it was all of the past few days. Of Arden and Toothless.

A smile passed over my lips for a split second, before vanishing only to be replaced by fear. I didn't want to die. All I could do was pray to the Gods above and hope they pitied me. I forced the images from my head and repeated that I wasn't going to die. Hoping that by convincing myself I could convince them too.

He pulled the trigger, I fell.

I know it's really short but I had writers block. Sorry, please read review

40. Chapter 40

Blinking I stared up confused, aside from a stone prodding my back there was no pain. But there was a heavy weight pressing down on me. I could see the sky above and something in the corner of my eye. But I couldn't turn to see what it was. Whatever was weighing me down was immobilising me too.

Moving my arm I pressed into the object on me, feeling it shift slightly and lessen in weight. Now that I could see what it was my face turned scarlet.

"Arden?" I breathed, my eyes tearing from his face to fall onto his neck, a small red mark was present, a few droplets of blood surfacing. "You saved me."

"Of course you idiot." He snapped, pushing himself to his feet and pulling me with him. I was slightly confused as to why he was so snappy but pushed the thought to the back of my head. "Come on, stop daydreaming, they've got a gun, remember?" It clicked then and I was almost embarrassed that I hadn't noticed it. Well, remembered it, he had a bloody gun!

He pulled me as he started running, his hand snagging the ropes binding Toothless and yanking them hard.

The hunters seemed to be slightly dazed from what was happening giving us the perfect chance to escape, Toothless was pulled to his feet, the ropes falling. He registered that quicker than I did as he started to run, throwing us onto his back in the process.

I clung onto both him and Arden desperately, fearing that the slightest movement on my part would make us all fall to the dirt. I refused to close my eyes too, it had to be too good to be true back there, no one could beat a bullet and I was sure we were both in a pile by the hunters' feet.

I could feel Arden's hand digging into mine, his nails were sure to be leaving crescent moons on my flesh. But I was pleased for that, it meant I really was alive, the gun hadn't punched a hole through my head.

I held onto Toothless, relieved that we were free. I had worried that neither of us would escape but all three of us were fine.

"Are you alright?" He whispered in my ear, his head settled against me.

"Yeah, thanks for saving me. You have impeccable timing." I wasn't sure why I whispered back or why he whispered to me, all I could guess was that he was afraid they could hear us. That raising his voice a single fraction would alert them to our presence. I couldn't blame him though, our escape was pure luck.

Every way I looked at it, even now, I can't see how we escaped. If Toothless had broken free back then Arden's head would be bouncing on the floor. Whereas if Arden hadn't jumped on me I would have been no better off. And I can't see a scenario where Toothless comes out of this free. Let alone all of us with little more than a bruise and a graze on the neck.

"Thanks, but I can't not think of what would have happened had I been a second slower. I can't think of it, I wanna scream when I do." He admitted, and I found myself smiling. It made me happier than it should have to hear that.

"Let's not think of that, you saved me and I'm still here." I smiled, and though I hated to admit it I was quite glad those hunters found us. They've unknowingly pushed us closer together. Whether Arden knew that too I wasn't sure.

Our conversation ended as Toothless ran closer to the village, my heart jumping into my mouth when I saw the thinning trees.

"Toothless!" I yelled, no longer caring if the hunters' heard. His head snapped to me and I yelled at him to turn.

He did. He turned left and carried on running, still near the border of the trees but far enough away that we weren't immediately visible. I breathed a sigh of relief, feeling Arden do the same behind me, no doubt he could see what might have happened.

My outburst may have saved us from the village but it ruined us in terms of the hunters. I could see them now, in the far distance, heading right for us. Their guns raised over their heads and loud shouts resonating from their throats. They were far away but appeared to be growing quickly, at this rate they'd reach us in no time.

I tried to think, to come up with some way for us to escape. But any plan escaped me. I could only hope for the best. One thing did occur to me though, if they reach us the village would no doubt hear and we'd be caught by both.

"Toothless, head deeper into the woods." I commanded, stiffening as I dreaded my own prediction. I could see it now the hunters pouncing on us, tackling us to the ground. Taking Toothless away. It made me shudder at the mere thought. But I couldn't not think about it, I had to be prepared. And frankly, as far as I was concerned I'd rather they take us away from the village. At least then my dad wouldn't see me.

The hunters grew rapidly as Toothless sprinted away from the border. I chanced a look back, nothing I could do from here would stop the

hunters from getting us, I might as well check the tail. I dreaded what might be there, or more accurately what wasn't.

But my heart carried on beating when I saw the flapping fin. It didn't appear broken. The branch had just been knocked out. I let out an audible sigh, maybe, if we ditched them for long enough I could jam another branch inside and we'd be able to take off.

Looking up I could see them far off, their guns firing into the sky a loud bang following quickly after. I was almost relieved they were doing that, if they ran out of bullets we'd be in the clear. But they were scaring me, what if one came down and struck us killing us instantly.

Toothless seemed just as startled as I was and began leaping into the air, gliding for a second and running some more. I could see he was going to try and glide over them but that would never work, they'd constrict his wings and pin us once more.

I didn't say anything though, not now, I'd tell him once we were a little closer. I was sure they could see his plan and they'd be spending their time getting the catching equipment ready meaning no gun fire.

And sure enough the bullets stopped and the catcher was produced.

"Toothless, go around them." I whispered in his ear, hoping he'd catch on. He did.

Waiting till we were but a few feet from them he made to look like he was jumping, the hunters throwing their weapon onto their shoulder to shoot up, and dove around them, his tail whipping their sides and knocking them to the ground. Pained groans could be heard from them as they landed less than gracefully.

I wanted to cheer more than anything but knew I'd be jinxing myself. I wouldn't celebrate will we were safe and I could see that with my own two eyes. Toothless went back to leaping, apparently thinking we were covering more ground like that.

"Sarah?" Arden asked making me jump, I'd almost forgotten he was there he was so quiet. "Where are we going?"

I almost slapped myself, and him for making me realise. I had no idea where we were going. I was so focused on fleeing the hunters and not dying that I hadn't realised we were running aimlessly.

I thought quickly. The cove wasn't an option and neither was the village. We had been heading to the sea before to look for a new home but I didn't want to risk leaving the woods.

We had two options, run forever till they get bored and leave. Unlikely. Or, find somewhere to hide and pray they don't find us. Again unlikely.

I could already see Toothless was starting to tire, the strain of earlier having caught up at the worst possible time. That left one option. We had to find cover.

But where? Most people when being chased took refuge in the woods, we were already there so now what? We couldn't hide in the trees. I think even I could find an eight foot black reptile amongst this green.

It was hard, all the trees around here were scrawny. But further in they were packed together so tight not even rain could seep through. I wasn't sure what to do. They'd provide us with enough cover, if we could make it there. But, if we couldn't get through the trees quick enough we were sitting ducks.

Glancing behind I couldn't see them and made my decision. Hoping I wouldn't regret it.

"Toothless, head as deep in as you can."

We had passed numerous trees, each one a fraction of a millimetre thicker than the last. It hadn't affected us at first but now we were starting to struggle, Toothless was squeezing through the trees, and we'd been forced to pull our knees to our chests in case they were severed off by the rough bark.

I couldn't hear the hunters anymore. And whether that was from the pounding in my ears blocking out most sound or that we'd actually lost them I wasn't sure. I didn't want to think about the possibilities though, it was hard enough trying to stay on a fleeing dragon.

The trees got noticeably thicker up ahead and I winced when Toothless showed no sign of slowing down.

He dived for them, and we flattened ourselves instinctively. Just before impact he span 90 degrees and slotted easily through. The rough bark millimetres from scraping my scalp off and leaving me bald.

A noticeably heavy breath breathed on my neck and I could feel a distinctive weight. Seems I wasn't the only one who was relieved.

Glancing behind I had no doubt the hunters couldn't get through. They were as wide as houses and the few thin ones were strapped up with dozens of heavy firearms. There's no way they'd be able to unclip it all and get us in the near future.

Patting Toothless' back I fought the urge to scream in triumph. No sense deafening Arden. He slowed down massively falling into a relaxing trot that was far nicer than having the wind and dozens of bugs splatter against my face at inhuman speeds. I could finally hear somewhat, much clearer than before, wind had been beating my eardrums. Now I was left with just a faint ringing that would hopefully disappear.

I turned him to the right so we could put more distance between us. Going in straight lines made us an easy target, but if we went a mile or so right and carried on they'd lose us briefly. And that might be just what we need.

"Hey, Sarah? What're we going to do now? We need a saddle for him, my legs are completely numb so that's obvious. But we can't get around

to making it. And the hunters know who we are now. What're we meant to do?" He sounded almost pleading, and it pained me to hear that. He was relying on me and I didn't even have an answer for him.

"I-I don't know, but it's not as though we can fix that problem now. We're being hunted, literally, I think we should deal with them first."

"Haven't we already? They're nowhere in sight."

"I don't want to risk it, we'll both be dead if they find us." He agreed, and though I could hear him grumbling he knew I was right and wouldn't protest any more. I spend the majority of the run looking around, trying to find both the hunters and a suitably hiding place. The cove was useless now the hunters knew where it was but I was tempted to return.

Maybe because it was the closest thing to us, or maybe because I still felt safe there. But we'd had enough trouble getting Toothless out. I wasn't going to ruin it. I tried to think what to do, but it seemed I'd done everything lately. Not that I can blame him, he's scared of flying and being on Toothless is a big thing for him.

"Sarah, maybe we should pull over for a second. I think we've put a good distance between us. Let's take a short break. Maybe we can get his tail working again." He proposed, and I couldn't find a reason to dismiss it. I couldn't see them nor could I hear them. Odds were in our favour. Nodding a settled my hand on Toothless' back, just between his shoulder blades, to gain his attention.

He turned to glance at me through the corner of his eye. Nodding softly as he understood the eye contact. I don't know when we got so good at reading each other, but I wasn't complaining. He slowed till we were little more than standing still. For once the world looked still and I breathed a very contented sigh. Though I knew it wouldn't last forever. I'd be lucky with a few minutes.

Looking around I could barely see a cliff face not too far from us. Maybe half a mile. It was very well hidden, only visibly when it towered over the peaks of the trees. Now I looked closer I could see dips in the rocks lining the wall, some looked like foot holes while others looked big enough to hide in.

Reaching behind I grabbed at Arden's arm, shaking him harshly.

"Arden, look!" I implored, though I didn't specify at what.

"What? What's wrong?" His eyes darted around, though he didn't once focus on what I wanted. I realised I probably sounded panicked so I repeated, as calmly as I could.

"Look through the trees, there's a cliff."

"So?"

"We can hide there!" I was sure he was intentionally being difficult. Why though? I had no idea. Still, it didn't bother me, I just patted Toothless and headed over to the cliffs. Which, now I'd noticed them,

looked a lot taller and steeper than I'd imagined.

Arden's POV

I sat behind Sarah at the foot of the cliff, it seemed to tower above us and I couldn't help wondering where we were. This certainly wasn't visible from the highest peak on Berk. I could smell a faint sea breeze, and for the life of me I could swear it was getting colder. But I couldn't place where we were. We must have been here at some point. I must have been here at some point.

Toothless stood on his hind legs, pressing against the hard rock face. He looked like a cat trying to scale a tree. But unfortunately for us his stance sent us horizontal. Neither of us could suppress a scream as we clung to one another and the slick scales of Toothless' back. And though it pains me to admit it, the girly scream hadn't come from Sarah.

"T-Toothless, down!" I yelled, he threw a look at me from over the shoulder, looking confused as to why my voice was suddenly high pitched. I didn't care for the look though, anyone would be terrified, it was just by bad luck my voice decided to break too. Still, he complied, dropping back to the floor and, though I couldn't see his face, rolling his eyes.

I jumped from his back, stretching out my aching legs, Sarah stayed perched there though. As to why I wasn't sure. It quickly became clear when Toothless arched back once more, his hands landing on the rock and Sarah clinging to him like a baby koala.

The cliff face was much more jagged than the cove so scaling it shouldn't be impossible. Even if we didn't have Toothless. That being said I was staying firmly planted on the ground. If it was death by hunters or death by cliff I'd prefer the hunters. Maybe I wouldn't suffer as much?

"Arden, if you're not coming up on him at least follow behind."

"Behind? Don't be stupid." I laughed, though it was forced. "If I'm going up I'm right beside him. I'm not being squashed by a scaly cat." She rolled her eyes as she turned back to the cliff face, but I could swear I could see a small smile lingering there.

"Do what you want." And without another words from her she patted the dragon giving the signal for him to move.

I had had no actual intention of going up there at all. If Toothless was there I could just hide nearby and they'd be none the wiser. But as they started to climb I found myself grabbing onto the jagged rocks, heaving myself up too. I cursed under my breath at my own stupidity. If I die I'm blaming it completely on them.

Crawling up the side of the rocks I caught the smirk from her, ignoring it. No way was I relying on a dragon. Looking up I could see we were nearly at the mouth of what seemed to be a miniature cave. My fingers ached like crazy but I kept going.

Dragging my body up, I slumped against the thankfully flat ground, Toothless apparently bating me as my head landed on his foot. From my

position it was bit enough, then again he was twice my length at least.

I could hear Sarah slipping off, a shade casting over me.

"You can sleep if you want, you look like you've been awake for days." Looking up I couldn't deny it. We'd slept outside before and last night I was too busy cursing myself to get much sleep. I could really use a few minutes.

And before I could even close my eyes I dropped, fast asleep.

****To make up for the woefully short chapter before I wrote as much as I could. Please read review****

41. Chapter 41

A heavy hand on my shoulder shook me roughly awake, my eyes cracked open slightly and I let out a low groan of discomfort. Whatever I was sleeping on wasn't made of silk and feathers.

"Arden, shush, they'll hear you." A voice hissed in my ear, and it was only then that I took in my surroundings and everything flooded back. Great, we were being chased by psycho hunters who wanted to kill us and probably Toothless too.

"Why'd you wake me up then? I'm pretty sure I don't snore." It was a tired argument and one I expected to be brushed off quickly, but she actually froze to think about it. "Never mind it now. Where are they?" Despite being tired I could remember why she'd woken me, presumably the hunters were close by.

"Just below us, they haven't seen us but I don't want to risk anything. Who knows how well they know the area." I nodded, having strained my ears to listen to the almost mute words come from her lips. Not trusting my own voice I just nodded, pushing myself up and rolling onto my stomach to peak over the side of the cave like thing we were hiding in. Toothless was tucked inside the cave, away from view. He was practically invisible.

Over the edge of the ledge I could see two of the hunters, each of them looking in separate directions. Right next to the cliff but they didn't seem to know it was there. Smirking I tucked myself back, smiling at Sarah to silently convey that it was safe. She seemed to deflate, having moved next to Toothless and ensure he stayed as quiet as a mouse.

I thought over what was to happen as I watched them intermittently. Keeping out of sight for the majority of the time. I would hate for them to catch me spying. Who knew what they'd do.

"Where the hell are those brats?" One of them grumbled, making me jump. I hadn't expected to hear anything from them. I guess I presumed it was only the boss who spoke.

"How should I know? Maybe the dragon's ripped them to shreds. That girl's the mayor's daughter, if she's dead he'll be grieving and leave the village in our hands."

"Hey, don't let the boss go hearin' you talk like that. He and the mayor've been talkin' the guy thinks the cat's got the girl. He's frettin' enough. We've got the village now, those savages are utterly clueless about everythin' that's been happenin' in their village."

I listened closely as they spoke, Sarah having bunched up beside me to listen too.

"I suppose, still, sayin' the girl's dead would be a real boost to our control. Who knows, they may get so mad that they agree to attack the 'cat's."

"That's suicide. The dragons are going to raid tonight and we're offering sacrificial lambs."

"It'll be a benefit. If we can capture one we might find the nest."

"Don't get your hopes high, we've been trying for years to do just that."

"I know, I know." The man agreed, I couldn't see him, but honestly, I wasn't sure I wanted to. I had frozen in place, those idiots had told us a hell of a lot and they hadn't the slightest clue.

"Come on, let's go check over there." I watched as they walked off, barely able to see their fat forms shuffle through the trees. I was surprised they could fit though, I was sure someone had to have gotten stuck between the trunks.

Once they were a safe distance away I regained my mobility, pushing myself up and sitting back on my heels. I didn't know what to say. What they'd revealed was huge, we couldn't not go home now. Sarah had to at least. Her dad was an important man, if he thought she was in trouble damn the rules.

I opened my mouth to speak but my words came from her mouth.

"So, what now?"

"I was about to ask you." I admitted, trying to force a grin. It was easily false.

"I don't know, we need to stay with Toothless, we're trapped here too. But, I can't have dad thinking that I'm in danger. You know the kind of extremes he goes to." I did, the whole village did. Stoic was famous for his overprotectiveness. I'm surprised he didn't wrap her up in bubble wrap.

Moving closer to her I pulled my knees closer to my chest, I'd wanted to say something since we ran into each other, but I'd been tossing the idea around in my head. I wanted to tell her, she probably didn't think it was that important but it was weighing on me.

"Sarah?" She looked over, her face showing curiosity. "I'm sorry." Confusion quickly followed and her head tilted so far to the side I was afraid it'd fall off.

"What for?"

"For before, y-you know, our fight." I don't know why I was suddenly nervous, but something made me fidget as though I was being scolded by my mum.

She laughed. "Don't worry about it." Waving my worries away she suppressed the rest of her laugh and stood. "It's fine, honest, it wasn't like it was all your fault."

I didn't know whether to be relieved she had forgiven me or annoyed that she'd laughed. As I was about to retort she kissed my cheek quickly, my eyes widening dangerously, so fast I was surprised they didn't fall out.

"Don't worry about it. Now, come on, we're heading back to the village."

I could feel a blush. Very prominent on my face. I was sure I resembled a blond tomato but I didn't care. I was very happy. Why wouldn't I be?

Nodding stupidly I pushed myself to me feet, stumbling forwards slightly before regaining my balance. Giving her a small smile I waited for something to happen. What I don't know. But somewhere in my mind it didn't register that we were climbing down the rock face again. I kind of assumed, I suppose, that we'd just end up down there. Somehow.

When it dawned my face lost all colour, that I know from the more than slightly worried look I was getting from Sarah. Shaking my head harshly I sat myself on the edge of the cliff, looking down. I can safely say I wasn't thinking too clearly at the moment.

I felt as though I was going to faint. It was so high.

"Well, looks like we'll be scrambling." My head snapped painfully towards her, jerking the muscles there. Before I could even protest she swung herself over the edge and clung on like a koala. My stomach dropped just staring at her, but I stood anyway. Knowing I'd never hear the end of it should I chicken out.

Gradually lowering myself over the edge I held on for dear life, the prospect of meeting death all too real at the moment. Especially with my hands sweating.

Watching as she struggled to find handholds knocked me from my worry, with where I was now, handhold or not I'd fall to my death. I had to get down too. My feet scrambled for some form of grip as I lowered myself, the last thing I could see before dropping below the floor of the cave like thing was Toothless' jade eyes watching me worriedly. He thought I was dead too.

My hands clawed at the side, trying to find the holds I'd used to climb up, but it seemed they'd all disappeared. I slipped for what had to be the thousandth one in the space of a minute and barely managed to pull myself up, my fingers aching beyond comprehension.

My foot managed to find one of the missing footholds and I chanced a look down, catching sight of Sarah staring up at me. She was already on the ground. Grumbling to myself under my breath I quickened the

pace, not caring that I was losing my footing far too often for my nerves' liking. I was supposed to be the athletic one but here I was losing to a girl who made a point of avoiding all physical activity. It was embarrassing, not to mention damaging to my pride.

I landed with a stumble but I was down, my fingers trembling. Clenching them tight I took a long steady breath and slumped back, feeling as though I was on the verge of passing out. I really didn't know I had this many phobias until I met Sarah and Toothless. Now I can add height to the ever growing list.

"Alright, we're down, now come on, we don't have time for daydreaming."

"Do you know which way back it was?" I asked, I hadn't been paying too close attention with all my muffled screaming earlier.

"No. But we'll stumble upon Berk eventually." I could tell if her confidence was feigned or not so I took her word for it, heading straight forwards. That seemed the best option, just try and follow Toothless' footsteps. Granted, most of his 'footsteps' were small grooves in trees where his wings weren't quite tucked in enough.

****please read review****

42. Chapter 42

We walked for what felt like an eternity. My arms ached terribly from the amount of times I tripped and landed on them to break my fall. How they hadn't broken I wasn't sure. Sarah wasn't fairing much better, dirt caked her legs from all her falls. Had I been more chivalrous I'd have attempted to help her. But no sense in us both landing on our faces.

The threes had started to widen a while back and I hadn't fallen for what had to be five minutes. I was not convinced all my falls were through habit, I was making myself face plant the dirt. I don't know why but that was all I could think of, I wasn't the clumsy kind after all.

I'd taken to watching my feet more than everything around us so had no idea where the hell we were. I was relying on her to get us out safely. Though thinking about it now that wasn't the best idea. She did tend to have a backwards sense of direction at the most critical of times.

I slammed into the back of her sending both of us to the floor. Grumbling to myself I pushed myself onto my knees, I really did need to pay attention. She glared at me as she stood, hands on her hips.

"Ow." She made a point of dragging it out.

"Sorry, why'd you stop?"

She looked at me as though I'd just asked why the sky's blue, moving aside she pointed to a rather good reason. A giant stone wall. There were a few of these scattered about Berk, only set up in the last

hundred years. They were at the edge of the cliffs so wanderers didn't fall and snap their necks on the sandy ground. My eyes widened involuntarily, had it not been for this wall and Sarah I'd have fallen to my death. The walls weren't complete, whoever'd made them gave up halfway through so there are only a few patches to actually have walls.

"We're lost?"

"No, we just took a wrong turn." She defended, arms across her chest. Though I could see a blush clear as day. She was embarrassed, she'd gotten us lost.

"We, I was following you." I pointed out, spinning on my heels and walking back the way we came, not having to watch my feet thanks to the trodden down ground.

"You shouldn't have done that then, should you?" She huffed, walking past me with her head held up. I couldn't resist rolling my eyes at that. Though I could never be really annoyed at her. Not anymore.

"Sorry." I apologised, though I wasn't sure what for. I followed her wordlessly after that, completely confident in her ability to lead us out of here. She wouldn't get us lost again, I was sure.

The rest of the walk was in silence, we were getting closer, that much I was sure. The trees were widening and the smell of a burning fire was nearing. I could guess who the fire belonged to, Gobber did have a habit of burning back the woods to grow the village out. Stoic didn't approve of that though, it was one of their few secrets the rest of the village knew but each other didn't.

The closer we got the more clearly I could hear him grumbling to himself. A few coarse words slipping in too.

"Bloody creatures. Where the hell are they comin' from? That little runts being carried off now. Who knows what'll happen to the lass now? I hope they're all alright. This village is small enough as it is, w'out our kids and crops being dragged away."

I froze, was he talking about us? We hadn't been back during the night, and from the sound of it a disappearance had happened. What was thought to be a mountain cat, but now. I know that's a big fat lie. It was more likely it was a dragon, if those hunters were any indication.

"How old was she this time?"

"Seven, poor mother's cryin' her eyes out."

My eyes widened at the second voice, though I couldn't see the other male through the trees. Still, I unfroze when I realised it wasn't us. But it seemed Sarah had.

"What?" I whispered, so low I thought she didn't hear me.

"Someone was taken last night."

"Yeah, so?"

"Who? What could have happened to make a little girl vanish?" I thought for a moment, but came up empty. The only thing I could think of was the hunters, but they wouldn't do that. Right? Their job was to stop Toothless and swindle this town out of money. Not something I condone but as long as Toothless' safe I'm not going to complain. "It can't be Toothless and there's no mountain cat. Do you think there are more dragons? Do you think they've come for Toothless and are returning home with the kids?"

Panic washed through me briefly before I shook my head. I'd had a horrible idea of Sarah being taken from me, but neither Toothless nor I would ever let that happen. She raised a brow at me in curiosity but I refused to answer. I didn't want her knowing of my insecurities, who knows how she'd react?

"This is interesting." Was all I managed to hear as she shuffled away, intent on finding a way around the one armed and legged man. I knew I'd missed something, I had to have, who else calls a child being taken away interesting.

"What is?"

"The dragons. They're not destroying the village, just picking kids up. It does stand to reason that they're looking for something."

"But, I'm not so sure I believe those kids from the forest. Who knows what rubbish they've been told to cover the boss' tail?"

"Still, I don't think such an outlandish lie would be their style. They didn't even know we were there, they were only repeating their boss' words." She explained, her voice so quiet I almost missed it.

"There boss was lying to them. Obviously." It was to me but she seemed dubious. Not that I blame her. If I'm honest I wouldn't believe me either.

"I'm not so sure. Come on, we need to find my dad before they can poison him anymore." I didn't argue, following after her my eyes constantly flickering between Gobber and whoever he was talking to. I didn't know he had any friends other than Stoic.

We snuck to her house using the forest and slipping around buildings. For a pair of kids, one incredibly clumsy I don't think we did too bad. Who knows, a future as spies may not be out of the question.

Her house quickly came into view, just as ginormous as I remember. How she could navigate that place I have no idea. We headed around back, up the steep hill crawling up to stay out of view of the other villagers. Her house was incredible but it was in full view of everyone else.

I felt slightly stupid, crawling up the grass, but it would be worth it to keep Toothless and Sarah safe.

Standing once we were covered by the house she tested the door, smiling to herself as it clicked open. I wasn't quite as pleased as

she was, then again this all depended on him being home.

We crept through, keeping silent, apparently she wanted him to think he was being broken into. I didn't protest though, course not, Stoic didn't like me as it is. I don't need to give him more reason. The lights were all off though a small noise could be heard in the background.

I followed the sound, peaking around the corner to see a large chair with an even larger man sitting in it, TV near mute as it played out the news. Or more specifically news regarding the hunters here on Berk. I couldn't help notice how exhausted Stoic looked, not at all how I'd last seen him. He looked as though he'd been worn down, was it because of Sarah? That was the only reason I could see.

Reaching out to grab Sarah to take her to a more private place to talk my hand grabbed at nothing but air. Jolting to look across I saw that was all there was stood beside me, Sarah's small body was already heading towards the, presumably, sleeping Stoic.

Fighting back the panic I stood back, hiding behind the door. Cowardly? Perhaps, but Stoic wasn't my biggest fan. I watched as she prodded him, her finger jolting back instantly as the large man moved.

Hiccup's POV

Holding down the gasp of shock as he moved before my finger properly touched him I stood my ground waiting for the inevitable. But as the seconds ticked by nothing happened. I released my breath and prodded him properly this time. His brows furrowed, a small grunt coming from his lips. His eye cracked open, widening exponentially when it landed on me.

He jolted upright, grasping onto my arms tightly as though he didn't believe it was really me.

"S-Sarah? That you? You're really here?"

"Hi dad." He pulled me to his chest, holding on as though I'd vanish at a moment's notice. Prying my arms from where they were trapped by my waist I hugged him back, though far less painfully.

"B-But how? They told me you were taken away. When, what, how did this happen?"

"I'm fine dad. I've just been a little busy lately." I excused. It was true too, how am I supposed to balance, school, home life, and caring for a gigantic dragon who's being hunted? It was too much to juggle. Even with help.

"I'm just glad you're back. I was so worried. I was convinced you were dead. I thought I'd lost the most important thing in my life." He hugged me all the tighter, a painful creak in my back telling me anymore and I'd end up like my mum.

"Dad, dad, I'm fine. And I will be as long as you stop hugging me!" He dropped me almost instantaneously letting me drop to the floor with a sharp thud. Stifling a groan from the ache in my back I stood, rubbing at the throbbing area. Holding in a pained ow I righted

myself, waiting for the next onslaught of questions sure to come.

"Where have you been?" He seemed to have calmed down more than I'd given him credit for, asking just once and waiting somewhat patiently for the answer.

"That, uh, that's not the best question, I'm not too sure I can answer that." I admitted, looking anywhere but at his face. He stared at me confused for a moment, but didn't change the question, staring at me with the hardened eyes of a man who'd lost so much and wasn't willing to lose any more. "I-I've uh, I've been with...Um-"

"-She was helping me. We've got a school project we're doing together." I was sure I'd lost my eyes they'd widened so much, but somehow I managed to keep them. Turning I stared at him through the corner of my eye, Arden? Had he just saved me?

"What are you doing here? I thought your mother said you weren't at home."

"No, well, uh...I was grounded, and uh, the only time I was let out was to help her to I kind of uh, took advantage and we went to the woods. But, well, um, we kinda got lost." I almost slapped myself with how terrible he was at lying. No one would believe that, every member of this village knew the reachable section of these woods like the back of their hands.

"You should know better Sarah, but I suppose it's my fault for being so protective over you." What? "I guess I'll have to take you out to the woods more and teach you the land." I don't think my jaw could have dropped anymore, h-how? How did he believe that?

"It was my fault, we should have just done it at my house."

"Don't worry too much about it. I'm just glad you're safe, those men who've come to capture the mountain cat said it would be a miracle if you're still alive. I was this far from sending out a search party."

"You didn't though." I couldn't express how relieved I was that he hadn't. It was proof that he was trying to be less clingy.

"No, I was sure my worried parent would sense if you were in mortal danger and as far as I could tell you were fairly safe." It may not have been exactly right, I may have been closer to death than even I would like to admit, but no sense ruining the work he was trying to do.

"Well, if you'll excuse us we've really got to finish this project."

"Yes, of course. I can imagine you weren't completely focused on your project while you were missing. I'll phone school to clear up this misunderstanding Sarah." Thanking him quickly I grabbed Arden's hand and pulled him away, barely registering the redness in his cheeks.

We ran upstairs, me leading as I knew he had next to no knowledge of my house. I couldn't blame him though, the last time we were here I

didn't exactly give him the tour.

Closing the door behind our backs I leaned against it, breathing a heavy sigh that it had all worked out. I couldn't believe it. How had I managed to get out of that? Arden sat on the corner of my bed, kicking his shoes off.

"So, what are we doing now? I wasn't aware we were staying here."

"No, but we still need to get him a saddle." It was obvious who I was referring to and he nodded in agreement. I didn't want to make one, a tail was one thing but this was holding our very lives in the balance. And I had an idea of attaching the tail to the saddle to keep it secure. Sticks and twigs could only do so much.

I wasn't so keen on our previous ideas, and I know there's a shop not too far from here that sell them. The more I thought of that option the better it sounded.

"Your dad won't notice us leaving will he?"

"No, he'll be calling Gobber to tell him the good news. Luckily Gobber has no idea I spent the night at his house."

"Wait, you what?"

"I spent the night at his house, I slept outside though. Don't worry."

"Is that why Toothless was in the village?"

"Yep." I stated blatantly, opening my door a crack and hearing my dad speak animatedly downstairs. Yep, he'd called Gobber, now the conversation will change from me to random gossip and he'll be in a however many hours phone call.

Motioning to Arden I slipped from my room and tiptoed down to the front door. Standing there waiting for him I pulled it open, silently thanking that we'd gotten new hinges recently. He joined me quickly and we snuck out, creeping away before my dad's very eyes.

****please read review****

43. Chapter 43

We snuck through the town, though in all actuality it was pretty vacant, just the farmers who live on the corner of the village coming in to sell their crops. I waved to them as we passed, they were both fairly stupid and Bucket was too innocent to even think of telling anyone he'd seen us. We passed them quickly, heading to the new shop down the road. I'd never been there and only briefly glanced at the entrance before.

"We're actually getting him a saddle. It feels like we've been putting this off for so long." He noted, and I had to agree, every time I thought about it something would happen and it would be impossible. Pushing that thought from my mind I picked up the pace, I wasn't going to let it happen again.

We stopped outside an all brown shop, the paint still shining as though it had just been layered on. Resisting the urge to touch the paint I pushed open the door and slipped inside.

There were only two other people inside the shop, browsing the different saddles and other riding equipment. I looked to Arden who pulled out his wallet, producing fifty pounds. It was more than I thought he'd have and I had nothing but it wouldn't be enough for a quality saddle.

Tearing my eyes from all the gorgeous saddles I eyed the flat and slightly misshapen ones at the back of the room. And while Arden continued to torture me looking over the glossy new ones I relented to the battered ones.

"Sarah, we can't afford any of these." He noted, not even aware I'd left his side. "Sarah? Sarah?" He looked around baffled while I searched the ones which were more our price range. "You mind not leaving me I look mental."

Holding in a laugh I tried to decide whether to buy this practically fat one or one that looked far too rigid for a dragon.

"Have you found one?" He asked, picking up the former of the two.

"Yeah, it's thirty so you've got more than enough to pay for it and it would be perfect for Toothless, it easily fits over his back." He nodded, tucking it under his arm and heading over to the teen behind the till.

He was ignoring Arden completely, texting someone from under the desk a smirk on his face.

"Excuse me." His head snapped up, squinting at the boy momentarily before returning to his texts.

"Shouldn't you be in school?" He asked, though it was evident he didn't really care.

"Shouldn't you? You don't look that much older than me." Arden replied, gaining a glare from me I pushed him away, taking the saddle and settling it before the teen.

"Don't wanna go." Seeing he wasn't there when he answered he slid his phone back into his pocket. He'd probably get fired if he lost any more customers, he didn't seem the most welcoming man. "This everythin'?"

"Yes." He scanned the saddle before requesting the money. Arden handed it over a scowl on his face. I tapped his shoulder before taking the saddle. I gave him a nod of thanks before throwing the saddle over my shoulder and leading him out of the shop.

"I don't like him." He muttered once the door closed.

"Yes, yes I know." The moment I appeased him an image of a man and wife came in my head and I couldn't contain my giggles.

"I don't ever wanna come back."

"Yes, I know." Patting his shoulder I walked past him, heading back to my home. Dad was probably talking to Gobber still but it never hurt to check.

"It's a miracle Gobber! You were right my old friend, I shouldn't have called for a search, she came back!" Wincing at the loud bellow I closed the door as quickly as I'd opened it. He was still talking, and it sounded as though they'd only just begun. Arden shot me a look requesting I explain, but I opted to lead him from my house. We'd only be ignored here.

He complained the entire way back down the hill, I had given him the saddle some time during our trek here and he began to whine about how heavy it was. I wanted to slap him, or roll my eyes, whichever worked best. But stopped myself once I realised that he had good reason to whine. I'd dragged him across the village on a fruitless journey.

I placated him by taking the saddle back and allowing him to lead. It put a wide smile on his face and for a split second I felt like the old me. The one who'd sit in my room and draw pictures of the two of us together in my sketch book.

We chatted aimlessly after that, me giving small corrections in directions when he focused too much on me. Toothless' new home came up in record time, his ears flickering above the rock being the only thing we could see. I wasn't sure if he was sensing us or the hunters but I know which option appealed to me.

Taking Arden's hand I forced him to quicken his pace, despite the fact that I was a few feet behind him just a moment ago.

While we scrambled up the cliff I handed him the saddle for a few feet, and after a while he handed it back. It was much easier alternating who was carrying the heavy leather. It took me a minute to scramble over the top of the cliff, the saddle weighing me down.

Teeth pinched the back of my collar pulling me the last few inches. I was dropped down rather haphazardly, laying on my back bent around myself and the saddle. Staring up my vision was filled with a grinning black dragon, his teeth retracted into his gums and his eyes wide and shining in the sun.

I could hear Arden pulling himself over the corner but Toothless and I were in such a trance that neither wanted to break it.

"What are you two doing?" He asked, and I shook my head roughly to snap myself out of it. I wasn't sure really, but it had just dawned on me in that split moment that we'd tamed a mythical beast. I had always known but I was trapped there for those few moments taking it in. He was inches from me but I would be more scared if a moth was that far from me.

I scratched his head absentmindedly and continued ignoring Arden's question. Soon enough he realised and changed questions.

"Are we gonna do this then? I don't even know how to, I've never even put one of these on a horse." Honestly, I hadn't either, I'd ridden a

fare few but dad always insisted it was too dangerous for me to saddle them. I think he worried that I'd do it wrong and fall off. But riding around on something that could trample me to death was fine. "Well miss Expert, I'll leave this to you."

He was about to sit at the back of the cave and watch as I struggled but I managed to snag onto his arm before he could, pulling him towards me and grinning softly. Though it was more from embarrassment than anything else.

"Not a chance are you getting out of helping me. I'm not exactly an expert you know."

"You're the rider, I know that much. I've seen you riding around on the horses at the farm on the edge of the village."

"I can ride them yes, but do you honestly think my dad would let me saddle one?" His face seemed to drop as he realised what I was saying.

"Are you kidding me? He doesn't let you saddle your own horse?"

"They aren't mine, I spend a lot of time at the farm during summer so the owner lets me use it." I explained, folding my arms over my chest defensively. He groaned in frustration but didn't say anything else, taking the saddle and flopping it over his back.

"Come on then, let's get this sorted, I'm sure the both of us can figure this out." I smirked at that, glad he hadn't made a big deal out of it. I stood on the other side of Toothless, pulling the straps of the saddle around and trying to remember all the times I've seen the farm owner saddle his horses. It couldn't be that difficult I had seen him do it numerous times.

It was much later when we finally managed to attach the saddle without it falling off with us when we tested it out. The straps were pulled to their limits thanks to Toothless' wide body and both of us were more than a little annoyed.

I dusted me scraped hands on my trousers, checking them for any more gravel before I pet Toothless' nose. Arden was sat on his back, just behind the saddle, nudging it and tugging it to see if it would easily break. He had insisted we both test it out before deeming it complete, and like a gentleman he insisted I test it first.

It had held mostly, Toothless on the other hand, he seemed a bit surprised by the added weight and decided to rear back like a horse and throw me off him. Afterwards he'd licked my hands clean of blood as a token gesture.

I stared at Arden completely amused, he was supposed to be tough and strong yet here he was worried about falling a few feet. I never thought I'd be the stronger of the two. Seemingly reading my mind he huffed and pulled himself onto the saddle, sitting there stiffly before relaxing.

"I works." He declared before dropping off him seconds later. Dusting his hands down he looked at me smug.

"Fine, it works." I agreed, keeping my thoughts about how childish he could be to myself. Though if I were honest I was glad he was showing another side to himself, not just the hard cruel side. In fact I hadn't really seen that since the year started. Even if I was losing track of days thanks to him.

I sighed as he jumped down from Toothless and patted his head, he seemed to sense my drop in mood as his head snapped over to me.

"What?"

"We're in too deep. I don't even know what we should do next."

"Does that matter? Let's just enjoy our success. We've finally got him a saddle now we just have to figure out how to keep the tail open." I was surprised by how much thought he'd put into it. Accepting his words I patted Toothless' nose and jumped back on him, wriggling around to check the saddle's strength.

He shifted uncomfortably under me, making a strange wining sound. Patting his back in an attempt to calm him I slid off, realising a new problem even if it wasn't too severe. He doesn't like saddles. It seemed my theory was right when I saw him shift awkwardly trying to push the leather from him.

"Toothless, stop, this is for us, you'll get used to it." I tried to sooth, but all I got was an irritated glare from him. "You'd rather we fell to our death? You'll forget about it sooner or later." He didn't stop wriggling. From the corner of my eye I could see that Arden was smirking but I ignored him, if he wasn't going to help I had no business with him.

I tried readjusting the saddle in case that was the problem but all that cause was a decrease in the shuffles. The promise of fish seemed to finish the job as he sat himself down and swept his tail around, almost like a puppy waiting for his treat. Sending Arden on his way to collect the food I sat beside Toothless, resting my head on his shoulder.

Now what was I going to do? Shrugging to my on question I settled back down, ready to sleep till he returned.

****please read review****

44. Chapter 44

Arden's POV

Trudging back through the woods with the oversized basket on my back. I had to go searching for it though forgetting where I'd dropped it. I wouldn't tell Sarah that though, it would only prove something to her in her own mind.

I froze mid step, sure I'd heard something to the far right. Holding on tighter to the strap of my fish basket I took a step back. Jumping three feet in the air when something brushed against the back of my foot. Spinning on the spot I stared down at a scaly thing with long sharp claws and anti-camouflage colours. Tumbling backwards away from

the thing my eyes were wide.

"What the hell?" I whispered to myself, trying to keep the thing back by swinging my leg slightly in its direction. It didn't look the slightest bit fazed, snapping at me with its oversized jaws, demanding something. What that was I'd rather not know. "What do you want?" I asked despite my better judgement.

It cried and leapt into the air, almost falling back in fear I let out a silent sigh of relief when it latched onto the basket. It could smell the fish? I could almost cry I was so relieved. Slipping the basket from my shoulders the mini creature jumped off and waited for what it knew was to come.

"I don't know what you are but you're only getting one." Fishing out one I tossed it to him watching as his jaws snapped shut and the fish was broken in half. Finishing its meal off it snapped at me again, wanting more. "No, no way you creepy thing, you're getting no more of this. He'll tell if they're not all there."

My excuse didn't work as well as I'd hoped but it stopped snapping at me. Choosing instead to follow after me like a little lost puppy.

"No, you can't have any more, they're Toothless'." The little thing glared at me and spat a small spark of fire to the ground making me jump three feet into the air and be very glad that Sarah wasn't here to see. "So you're a dragon? Sorry dragon none for you." I tried to sound calm and composed but my traitorous voice cracked on me.

It was harder to leave the thing than I had hoped, it seemed intent on getting more food from me. Something I couldn't do, this was our bribe and this little thing was starved. Embarrassingly it wasn't till then that it clicked in my mind that there was another dragon around like Toothless. Not in appearance or anything but personality. We had been attacked by one not too long ago, but this one seemed more concerned with what was in the basket.

It followed me all the way back to Toothless, even helping me up the side of the cliff when I started to slip. It wasn't until I reached the top and popped over with a dragon in tow did I realise how strange I must have looked. And how unconcerned I was having a dragon follow me.

I stared straight into Sarah's blinking eyes as both I and the dragon appeared, and bemusement was the most prominent of many emotions on her face. Grinning sheepishly I glanced over to Toothless and saw him engaged in a glaring battle with the dragon smaller than his head.

"W-What the hell's that?"

"Honestly? I have no idea, it kind of followed me back here, I think it wants food." The tiny dragon didn't let his eyes waver from Toothless' stamping towards him with exaggerated steps to try and intimidate him. It was quite comical though I didn't laugh, I looked to be in trouble as it is. I was supposed to get a bribe not find a dragon.

"So you decided to bring it back with you? Well, at least he's

forgotten about his saddle." She sighed as she ran a hand through her hair, thankfully she seemed to be enjoying the show too much to be properly mad.

"It followed me, and it's not like he's vicious, he'll be fine." I watched as he and Toothless fought over a fish that had spilled over the side of the basket, snagging it between both their jaws and pulling. More specifically the little one was pulling, Toothless just looked amused. I watched as Toothless won after a quick jolt of his jaw sending the little dragon face first into the ground.

I know I shouldn't feel proud but I figured out a way for Toothless to accept his saddle, another dragon wanting feeding. Whilst I was busy basking in my success Sarah had set about jotting down notes on a book I didn't know she had. Whenever she'd picked it up she'd been very sneaky about it.

"I'm drawing his tail. If we're going to learn how to fly more securely we need to figure something out and there's only so much he'll let us do." She answered my unasked question, pointing to the basket of fish the two dragons were fighting over. "Spill that out for them, but we're not keeping this one."

I could see she was smiling as I followed her order, watching as the tiny dragon pounced on the pile of seafood plucking one from the top and trying to run away. Toothless didn't look too pleased with his fish being nabbed under his very nose. Sitting down not too far from them I sat back to watch the display as they fought over their food.

"Just be glad we're not eating it this time." Sarah joked, jotting down a few notes. I wanted to laugh back but a shudder ran through me at the memory, it was a horrible experience. One I wasn't going to repeat in a hurry. As though just to spite me a fishes head landed in my lap with a dull thud.

Looking up I caught Toothless staring at me expectantly, the mini dragon being held back by his paw pressing his wing into the ground.

"What?" I asked, hoping I was wrong. Leaning down he nudged it closer to me, prompting me to eat it. "Oh god, Sarah!" I called, if I had to do this she did too.

"Little busy right now." She didn't even poke her head around to look, but she definitely sounded busy. Sighing I didn't have much choice in the matter and took a small bite from the side of the fish, grimacing at the taste. Still, it wasn't quite as foul as the last one so hopefully I won't be dying of food poisoning any time soon.

I caught sight of Toothless smirking out of the corner of my eye. I'm gonna kill that dragon, he only gave me this to prove a point to the other dragon. Swallowing the bit of fish I bit off I placed the rest next to me, rubbing at my lips trying to remove the slimy taste. Pushing myself up I moved around the two dragons to see Sarah sitting on Toothless' tail drawing. I wanted to glare and yell at her but seeing her focus so much on her little sketch pad, her tongue stuck between her lips, couldn't help think she was cute. My face flared at the very thought and I coughed awkwardly.

She looked up at me with wide eyes, holding a small worn down pencil in her hands. I smirked and sat down beside her.

"Thanks for that, cos of you I've had to eat raw fish again." She looked at me confused before putting the pieces together and laughing. If I were to say that didn't make it worth it I'd be lying.

"I'm sorry, but I think I have everything I need to start making the strap for the saddle and the tail."

"You sure?"

"Yeah, I should get home now, my dad's probably worried sick. He'll be done with the phone by now. You should get home too, your mum'll kill you. Aren't you grounded?" I cursed under my breath at the reminder. I was supposed to be grounded, and would likely be from now to the end of college. "Anyway, if you can I'll meet you at the blacksmiths. Be there by dinner."

I nodded, turning my attention to the dragons arguing over some fish, apparently they'd settled it. Toothless had a pile and the little one had two.

"What are we going to do about that one? We're not an orphanage. We can't just take in any dragon we want to and act as though it's normal."

"I know, don't worry I'll sort it out."

It seemed the dragon was going to do that for us, he swallowed his final fish and took off heading off over the sea and towards the distant islands surrounded by fog.

"See problem solved."

Toothless grumbled, hunkering down on his food and eating it without retracting. Seems he was protecting it.

She shook her head at me, patting Toothless on the snout before starting her climb down. I could tell it was going to be a long quiet walk back.

We made it to her house almost half an hour later, both of us so focused on not getting lost and not talking to one another that we, inevitably, got lost. The goodbye was quick and I ran off, hoping her dad had talked to my mum, if not I was a dead man walking to the slaughter.

Once I reached my street I could see her stood by the door looking worried, more so than I'd ever seen before. Running straight for her I tackled her in a hug, all that was leaving my mouth being a torrent of 'I'm sorry, I'll never do it again.'

"It's ok, it's ok, you're safe now. I've got you. When you didn't come back I thought you'd gotten lost again. When you told me she'd gone missing I was scared stiff. You're such a good boy Arden."

"Don't worry mum, she's completely safe. I was just over at hers

making sure she was alright. I'm sorry I was late back, I know I'm still grounded."

"I suppose it's ok, you were protecting someone. No matter what I think of her she's your friend." She patted my hair before sending me in to my room, grumbling I complied, but only because I was tired. If I was honest with myself I wanted to be like my four year old self. When something bad happened back then I could curl up with my mum for hours and not have to worry about anything.

Trudging into my room I collapsed onto the bed, dropping off instantly. Shoes still on and quite muddy.

Hiccup's POV

By the time I managed to enter my house and find my dad still on the phone, a new record, the stars were popping up in the sky. I stared at him as he talked on and on with Gobber, wondering if he had any idea what could happen to this village or what we were at risk of. I'd have to sit him down tomorrow and tell him. It's the only way he'd understand.

Standing behind him I listened for a few more moments before tapping his shoulder. And the loudest scream I'd ever heard was sent straight into my ear drums. Wincing I stumbled back, catching the phone he'd thrown.

"Thor all mighty Sarah, you scared me half to death. I could've swung for you." Laughing I heard Gobber joining me through the phone. I handed it back to my dad saying I was going to sleep as I ran up the stairs.

Closing the door behind my back I dove onto the bed, using the light from the moon to guide me. I was too tired to care about my main light. Changing quickly I buried under the covers and immersed myself in something I sorely missed. Thick, plush covers.

****please read review****

45. Chapter 45

The next morning I was awoken by a soft hand wiping my hair out of my eyes. Grumbling I cracked them open and blinked up at him, small rays of sunlight blinding me.

"Dad? What is it?"

"Nothing, I just wanted to make sure you were real. I was so afraid this morning that I'd open my eyes and it all be a dream." I smiled up at him tiredly, leaning into his hand. "I've phoned school, you won't be returning until the start of next week. Sarah, after this I think you should-"

"Don't bother dad, I'm not going to be home schooled." I cut him off without much chance to argue, burying down into the covers and pulling the high up. He sighed in defeat before leaving, only to stop at the door when I called him back. "I need to talk to you later, are you free?"

"I'm busy all day today, I'll be home spending all day with my beautiful daughter." I could tell he was thinking he was being sweet, and it was nice to know he wanted to be with me instead of having to for my mum's sake.

"I'll tell you around breakfast alright?"

"How about dinner, it's already eleven o'clock."

I wasn't shocked if I was honest, I had spent so many nights on hard ground to be on something that was on par with a cloud sent me straight into oblivion. Pushing the covers back and already regretting it I stood, stretching and sliding from my bed my dad already picking out some clothes for me.

I was lucky he wasn't the kind to buy childish clothes covered in bunnies and pink. Though if given half the chance I'm sure he would. He picked a short sleeved green shirt and some three-quarter trousers and a small brown body warmer.

Shooing him from my room I started to change, wondering if it was best for it to be just me telling him. Well, I'd know after I did it.

The smell of mildly burnt food reached me as I left my room dressed. Ordinarily my dad was a good cooker so the burn was something I found slightly strange. Walking into the kitchen I could see why, he was so busy putting everything perfectly on my plate that he was ignoring what was cooking.

Squeezing around him, in a kitchen that was surprisingly small compared to the house, I took the food off before a fire started. Setting it on both our plates I watched as he turned to grab the pan in my hand from the oven. Looking more than a little confused.

"I got it." I informed, watching as he jumped as I snapped him from his daze. Turning he looked a little shocked that I could touch pans but he remained quiet and started to re-straighten the already beautifully presented slightly charred food.

"Of course, I-I just, I want it to be perfect for you." He admitted, showing off a side not many people saw, the side that was a good caring father.

"It is perfect, like I said upstairs I need to talk to you. But it'd be better if you weren't jittery. Sit down and let's talk." I spoke slowly, watching as he lowered himself to sit opposite me, not taking his eyes away, almost as though he thought I'd disappear should he take his eyes away from me for a second.

"I'm sorry, I don't know what's wrong with me. I'm worried and I feel like you're going to disappear should I do something. I can't bring myself to believe you're really back. I don't want to wake up and find you're not back." I stared at him, emotion after emotion filling me with sorrow.

"Dad, I didn't mean to leave for so long."

"I know it wasn't your fault Sarah, I'm just being a silly old man. So, tell me, let's talk about what you wanted to say."

"Right, well, it's hard to explain and know you believe me. It's a little out there." He nodded, threading his fingers together on the table in front of him. He looked focused, watching as I took a breath to steady my nerves. "The reason the hunters are here isn't a mountain cat."

"What are you talking about? They're here to capture the cat that's wreaking havoc on our village. Kids are being taken. As recently as last night a pair of new-borns were taken from their mother's arms. She's in the hospital being treated for burns, cuts and hallucination."

"Dad, if it's a cat why is she burned?"

"Who knows, we do use torches to light the village." I rubbed at my face, already knowing how this conversation would turn out.

"Were any torches out in the morning?"

"No, but there were a lot of burn marks where she was hurt. She must have relit it."

Trying not to lose my patience I straightened in my chair, "how did she describe this mountain cat?"

"Ha, like we can take her word, she's suffered head injuries. She believes she saw a blue dragon."

I couldn't keep my eyes from widening. I'd struck some luck.

"Listen dad, does anyone believe her?"

"Gobber's leaning towards her, said he saw it happen and whatever attacked wasn't no ordinary animal."

"Do you believe him?"

"Of course."

"So, if I were to prove to you that it wasn't a cat would you believe it was a dragon?"

"I'd need some damn good proof." That was good enough for me, and honestly I wasn't planning on convincing him fully. That's like banging your head against a brick wall covered in steel. All I had really wanted to do was ensure he'd not take those hunters words for the gospel truth.

"Great, don't do anything or give anyone anything about this until I prove to you it's not a mountain cat."

He nodded, though it seemed more like one out of sympathy. Almost a though he was expecting me to fail and was doing this just to humour me. Pushing that aside I quickly ate my burnt breakfast/lunch, gave him a quick hug and ran from the house. Running back in seconds later to grab my sketch pad.

I could see him chuckling as I ran out again but I ignored him. I needed to get to the blacksmiths and I didn't have time for my

dad.

It probably took about half an hour to reach the blacksmiths. I was a little earlier than the time I set but he was stood outside waiting for me, staring off into space. Waving over to him his eyes snapped towards me, so fast it looked almost painful. That was soon confirmed when he rubbed at his neck.

"You're early."

"So are you."

Pushing the heavy door open I stared into the dark room, feeling hair tickle the side of my face as he looked through too. The lighting wasn't as good as the first time we came here and as I stumbled through I couldn't help looking for a candle.

I found one surprisingly quick, it didn't look like it smelled very nice but it was a candle nonetheless.

"You wouldn't happen to have a lighter on you by any chance?" I asked, once it dawned on me that it'd be useless if I didn't have it lit up. I saw a spark from the corner of my eye before a small flame was held over the candle lighting it.

"Took it from my mum." He excused, tucking it back in his pocket. "Oh yeah, and I brought everything I thought might help us." He added, gesturing to the stuffed bag by his feet that I'd been waiting to bring up. Nodding to him I went around the room and lit every candle I could lay my hands on, setting them in the corners and along the windows to give us some decent lighting.

"Hey, did you bring the saddle? I'm not sure what I did with it."

"Yeah, I got it. Don't worry, it's not like I broke into your house for it or anything." Ignoring the strange comment I quickly found my sketch pad and flipped to the last used page. A sketch of Toothless' tail and notes on how the strap would end up was carefully drawn there.

"Get it out for me then, I'm gonna have to attach some footholds onto it. Figures we'd buy the only one without them."

"I think they're called stirrups."

"Probably are, I was never any good at that part of the horse training. My teacher got sick of telling me the same thing over and over." He laughed, and I wasn't sure if I should be embarrassed or not. I couldn't help smiling back, it sent a warm feeling through me that just made me smile more.

"I think I have some stuff to make them, I figured you'd want one."

"You are a lifesaver." He handed me the stirrup equipment and I stared at it confused, trying to find out how to attach the metal to the leather then to the saddle. He took it back off me seconds later and helped, it was fairly embarrassing but who cares, I had Arden helping me. The boy I'd had a crush on since I could walk.

Arden finished attaching the stirrup together and passed it back to me for me to attach it. He stood quietly behind, looking over my shoulder as I tried to find the perfect place for them to go.

Unable to concentrate from the closeness of him I ushered him away to see to other aspects. He could at least get things ready for me while I wallowed in embarrassment. I was supposed to be the rider and I was supposed to be quite smart and here I am unable to attach a stirrup. I'm sure my already red face is on fire.

I heard him rustling through his bag behind me, picking out things that he thought would be helpful in his assignment.

Finally I managed to attach the stirrup to the saddle, thanks to an overly thick needle Arden handed over to me. I didn't bother to say that if I had this before it wouldn't have taken as long. I don't think he'd believe me.

Checking on him I found he was removing everything from his bag, and there was a hell of a lot. Picking up what I needed I lit the fire on the blacksmiths pit, squishing the pump that blew air onto it to start it going. The smell of coal burning filled the room, making me wrinkle my nose in disgust.

It was much easier to work once that little beginning was forgotten and the pit had heated up enough to start working on the small little mechanical components for the saddle. I set Arden on flattening them before I drilled holes into the still warm metal or attached it to the saddle and the long string of very strong rope I'd just attached.

We were quiet while we worked, only exchanging short commands with one another. It didn't matter though, we were getting through it all fairly quickly and before I knew it I'd forgone making and was attaching it all together. Glad that I'd read up about this kind of thing before making the job so much easier.

Rubbing my hands together as I stood and breathed a long relieved sigh I looked over to Arden who'd finished and was messing with the fire, pumping air into the flames to try and see how high the fire would get. I almost spoke up, but watching his mildly amused face I left him. Taking care of the final touches quickly.

"I think we're done." Arden stated, breaking the silence that had been mostly untouched besides the clanging on tools.

"Looks like it. I'll let you turn off the bit, I'll put everything back." He agreed, though he continued pouring in air. Ignoring him I set about gathering all the scrap metal and stuffing it back in his bag. We couldn't leave much new things lying around. This was an abandoned blacksmiths after all.

I took the modified saddle and strap into my arms and stared at it proudly, giving it a small affirming nod. Finally Arden extinguished the fire and kicked at the few bits of metal I'd left. He didn't go to retrieve them, merely grabbed his far lighter bag and swung it onto his shoulder, smiling wide at me.

"Let's go." He commanded, striding out first, I followed closely

behind.

****please read review****

46. Chapter 46

We walked in near silence the entire way to Toothless' new home. Idle chitchat the only thing breaking the comfortable silence. I sent him up the cliff first, taking his bag from him and throwing it as high as I could once he reached the top. Embarrassingly that wasn't very far but thankfully it snagged on a rock and I avoided being hit in the face by a still quite heavy bag. He pulled it up the rest of the way himself and from the smirk on his face I could see he was trying not to laugh at me.

Pouting, and feeling my cheeks flare, I threw up the tail. Thankfully, he was quick at diving for it before it could hit something and break. Huffing in embarrassment at my own strength I started trying to climb the cliff. I was lucky that I was a good climber and Arden resembled a baby deer trying to climb a cliff because I managed to save myself by arriving at the top in only a few minutes.

Toothless was staring at me from the corner of his eye, silently asking what the hell I was doing. Smirking I lifted my tail and saddle combination and he flicked his tail out looking mildly annoyed. Still, it was funny that he seemed to understand without a single word passing between us. I set the saddle down on his back and watched as he shifted in mild discomfort before it settled more comfortably on his smooth scales.

It took me a few minutes of trying to get the tail part to the actual tail without moving the saddle to realise that it had a clip for keeping it in place. While I was fixing Toothless with his saddle and trying to figure out my own work that had become tangled from the walking and climbing, Arden had taken to stroking his nose. Helping to keep the mass of fire breathing dragon away from being any way agitated.

I managed to finish quickly after and I felt a swell of pride within me. It was complete and it looked good. Whether it worked or not was a different matter but it definitely looked better than a stick wedged between a tail and Toothless. And the saddle looked far easier to grip than Toothless himself. I turned to Arden, grinning, he returned the look looking just as proud.

"Right, now what do we do? We can't test him yet can we?"

"No, give him a few minutes to get used to the saddle and we'll try him out. I'm sure it must feel strange on his back." I added, patting his snout as I turned from him to gaze over at the forest. The view was so nice from up here. I could see all the way to the village and even the tops of some of the houses. Though a lot of the trees blocked my path. If I looked closely enough I could see animals running through the thick threes, hopping over low hanging branches.

I smiled at the sight, knowing it was rare, the people of Berk rarely saw wild animals, they always remained hidden in the recesses of the

forest. My heart jumped into my chest when I saw movement behind the running animal. It wasn't moving fast, no it was very slow, and it seemed to be creeping through the forest. But from where it was hid I don't think it was trying to capture the animal.

The more I looked the more features I could spot. It was on its back legs and was incredibly burly. I was sure I could see something in its hands. I gasped as I saw its face. It was one of the hunters. They'd found us so soon! I could have slapped myself for not noticing sooner. Turning my attention back to Arden and Toothless I saw they were both lounging around, Arden patting his snout softly.

"Get up." I commanded, my voice coming out as a hiss.

"Huh, why?"

"Why? Why do you think, there are hunter's nearby." He complied instantly, looking over the edge with me and seeing the hunter creep forwards.

"Think they know we're here?"

"I don't know, and honestly, I'm hoping not to find out." I muttered back, unable to take my eyes off the man. Please turn around. I willed in my mind, silently begging him.

"I'll make sure Toothless' ready." I didn't look back to check on him while I stared at the man, completely convinced he'd magic himself up here and capture us. I watched as he turned behind him and hollered something the wind carried away. From the look on his barely visibly face he was growing impatient. I left him for a split second to see who he was calling to, and I was sure I was pale as a ghost. Several more hunters were following after.

"Arden, hurry up, if we don't get out of here before these guys spot us we're dead. We don't even have a chance of escaping." I was sure he could hear the panic in my voice as he sped up, the sound of metal clanging against metal growing more and more frequent.

They were nearing the bottom of the cliff and I ducked as they looked up. Glancing over to him I watched as he checked the saddle was secure before grabbing my arm and pulling me closer.

"This looks like a good spot men. Get up here and search the area." One of the men, I presume the front man, bellowed. And I mentally breathed a sigh of relief. They didn't know we were there, they were just using here for lookout.

"Come on, let's get out of here before they figure it out. We'll get away before they can even get their weapons ready." He whispered, climbing onto the back of the saddle, obviously having no intentions of trying to fly him. Settling up front it suddenly dawned on me that I have no idea how to fly him. I hadn't even tested the foothold out.

Pushing away all worries I patted Toothless' neck and told him to start, turning back once he prepared to take off to tell Arden.

"If this doesn't work you're going to have to act as the tail and keep it open." I could have laughed at the ghostly pale complexion he

had. He looked as though he'd been drained of blood. "Let's go!" If I thought about it, shouting out when there were men with men below probably wasn't the best idea, but we'd taken off by the time I shouted, Arden clinging desperately to me.

"Sarah, can't we-" He was cut off by a scream as Toothless dropped a little in the air, my foot having not been keeping the tail open. If the hunters didn't know we were up here before they definitely knew now. I laughed to myself as I cast a look back, more confident than I probably should have been. I felt Arden's arms tighten around me all the more, his head buried in the crook of my neck. "Oh my god!" He cried, panic flooding his voice.

I felt so high at being squeezed from behind and flying on a dragon that I barely registered that I'd have to move my foot and pray to the gods that it'd work. There was a slight delay before it clicked and we were sent higher into the sky, Toothless' tongue flapping about as he sent us higher quicker.

I was sure I could feel him purring under my hands and smiled at the thought, the bone crushing hold from Arden no longer an issue as far as I was concerned. I looked behind to see how the tail was holding up. It looked ok, the angle not quite where it should be but no small movement would correct it.

We managed to fly straight into the tree cover over four miles away from where we started. I couldn't cope with the worry of changing direction, as safer it may have been. Toothless perched on a branch in the tree cover, just high enough that we'd have little trouble setting off again. We were attempting to very slightly alter the angle we were at.

He didn't seem too pleased about it, whining about something. I'm guessing that he's been shipped about everywhere in just a few days. Still, we managed to turn him, me holding on tight to his neck as I tried to change how his tail was, I wasn't having much luck though because the peddle was far too loose to do minor corrections.

Breathing out a long sigh of annoyance I somehow managed to get Arden to change it for me, though the greenness in his face told me he didn't enjoy it. Pulling him onto the saddle I instructed for him to fly, and hopefully we'd land somewhere far far away from those hunters.

The wind rushed through my hair as we passed the trees quickly, levelling out once we were at a height we could die from. A shiver ran through my spine at that thought and I quickly shook it away, trying to keep myself from looking down.

"Oh my God we're gonna die!" Apparently he didn't do that. Feeling a head burry in my neck I sent Toothless flying forwards, feeling us wobble a little from the tail. I could feel Arden shaking and, despite feeling proud that I was coping well, tried to talk him down, he sounded close to hyperventilating.

I didn't know what to say so I ignored him and let Toothless continue flapping his large wings, the sound of him purring the only thing stopping me from panicking a little. At least he was enjoying himself, if not I fear he'll be a lot more difficult to

control.

Looking behind for a split second I couldn't see any hunters and we were nearing the sea. I slowed down Toothless as best I could and continued in more of a glide than a panic flurry. I felt Arden finally release me from the bone crush and sighed thankfully, it was incredibly painful and I daren't take a full breath in case my ribs cracked.

I could hear him panting behind me, and though he was only holding on lightly now I was sure I could feel him shaking.

"See, we didn't die." I tried to comfort, not knowing what to say. I was still unused to this side of him.

"Yeah, I guess we didn't." He managed to gasp out, his fingers loosening on my shirt, releasing it and leaving it in a crumple. I didn't mind, it was better than him digging into my skin.

I relaxed slightly, not much but enough so that he could fly where he wanted but the tail didn't collapse in on itself. Arden talked quietly, looking back every now and again and clamping on me whenever he did.

I wasn't looking where we were going but I could guess we were heading away from Berk. I didn't try to stop Toothless, he looked very happy flying slowly towards wherever he was going.

"There are some clouds rolling in." He noted, and I quickened Toothless a little to ensure we escaped them. I glanced back quickly and saw they weren't too thick. They'd be gone in a couple hours and that gave me the perfect excuse to practice flying on him. Even if it wasn't the most precise flying it was better than a stick jammed in to keep it still. "It looks pretty heavy."

"We'll fly around for a little while, let them pass over. We'll find somewhere to land after a while so he can rest. But for now, I think he's content taking us where he wants."

We stayed quiet for a while, there was nothing that needed to be said, we just watched as we flew over the sea, taking the scenic route. Passing over carefully placed rocks in the calm water bed. It was nice, romantic even, and I could feel myself blushing at the very thought. Thankfully Arden was too taken by the scenery.

"I always wondered what it was like out here. And I always wondered what it would be like to dive from those rocks into the sea." I cast him a look, raising a surprised eyebrow. He smirked back, shrugging his shoulders. "Not anymore." He excused, and I turned my attention to finding a place to land so we could wait out the storm.

****please read review****

47. Chapter 47

We managed to find a small island not too far from Berk, it had a small overhang but it was shaped more like a couch than anything. I laid against it looking out across the sea. Honestly, we could have run home before the rain hit, and probably have gotten a nice warm

meal too. But for some reason, I just wanted to get off the island for a little while. I couldn't explain why, the more I thought about it the more I thought it was because of the hunters, but we could have avoided them on the island. Could it have been that I wanted time alone with Arden? As much as I blushed at the thought, it was still no, we were alone a lot.

I wasn't sure why, but something niggling in me told me it was best if we left for a short while and went somewhere else. I didn't question the feeling which was probably a mistake, but it was too late to regret it now.

I sat beside Toothless, checking to ensure the saddle was fixed in place, it didn't move and that at least helped ease my mind a little. I looked up to Arden who'd recently moved to the water's edge, shooting his fingers down into the water as though grasping for it. I couldn't help but laugh when he did whatever he was doing, but I did keep trying to move around the side to see if he was accomplishing anything.

He muttered a curse under his breath and sat back on his heels, shaking his hand in an attempt to dry it.

"What are you doing?"

"Trying to catch some food." He answered plainly, not finding it at all strange. I didn't respond, not knowing what to say, instead I stared at him and watched as his wet hand disappeared once more and emerged with a wriggling fish in his clutches. I wasn't sure if I should clap or just sit there as he tossed the fish back, not aware that it went straight into Toothless' waiting mouth.

He tried for another one, throwing it back after he managed to catch a small one and sending it straight into Toothless' mouth again. I didn't tell him, wanting to see how long he'd do this for before he realised it was all for nothing. It probably wasn't the nicest thing I could have done but it was entertaining to say the least.

He threw back a few more before stopping, shaking his hand to try and dry it from the freezing water. Turning I could see the shocked look on his face as his eyes immediately met Toothless' face, the dragon still having half a fish hanging from his mouth which he chewed slowly. Arden looked to me, not wanting to actually ask.

"I would have told you, but he looked very happy." I answered, and as though to back up my claim Toothless nudged at Arden's arms, purring slightly as he swallowed the rest of the fish.

Despite looking annoyed Arden patted the dragon's head, smoothing his fingers over the slick scales.

"Guess I better get back to finding us something to eat." He sighed, looking slightly annoyed as he settled himself at the end of the island, looking down at the water intently.

"You don't have to do that," I started, but he seemed too engrossed with the job that he didn't hear a word. Deciding against stopping him I turned my attention to stopping Toothless from taking any more.

It must have taken us a good fifteen minutes to collect five fish, Toothless managing to get past me a number of times and snapping them up before I could grab him. We finally gave up after that. The storm over Berk had broken and we were huddled together watching as rain poured down.

We'd managed to start a fire thanks to Toothless and were eating our cooked fish. He didn't seem to mind as much as we did though and was slowly munching on his. Really, we probably shouldn't have been as worried about eating raw fish, we'd done it before with only slight problems.

I finished off the last of my fish, tossing the stick I had been using back into the fire, watching as it burnt in the thick flame. Standing I dusted off the scales I'd scraped off and shivered in disgust at myself. I'd never take fish and chips for granted again.

The rain over Berk didn't seem to be letting up any time soon, turning to them I stated.

"I think we should fly around a little first, I don't think it'll stop 'til night fall, and I don't want to be flying through that. I don't know storms very well, but it wouldn't surprise me if it was thunder. And lightning always strikes the tallest things."

"Good point, and with him with us we're the tallest thing for a long way. I say we head out towards the mist, it's always calm across there, and it gives us quick cover if we need it." He added, standing too along with Toothless. "Besides, I don't want to find out what happens if this gets wet, I just know it can't lead to good things."

We climbed onto Toothless' back, the greedy dragon having already eaten all his fish along with the bones of ours. How he could eat that grisly stuff was beyond me. I shifted on his back as he stood, already growing accustomed to having us perched there. The saddle was solid, the only reason that we might fall was Arden's constant shuffling. I contemplated telling him, but he had been doing so well with his fear that I was afraid it would shake him a little and we'd be back at the first step.

He seemed to calm down after a little while, his hands clutching onto me tightly and his legs glued to the side of Toothless. He was muttering something to himself, I presume it was to help him keep relaxed. Allowing him to get on with it I guided Toothless to the edge of the island, my hands grasping onto whatever they would as I felt him begin to stretch his wings, my feet stumbling over the peddle for his tail.

He took off, flapping his wings twice before settling in to a glide. It was smooth, as was the water that skimmed beneath his feet, his toes dragging against the still liquid. We got sprayed up our legs but it didn't bother us, we were both too happy watching the blue sky ahead of us, the clouds above our heads calm and fluffy, a stark contrast to the black rain clouds over Berk.

Arden wasn't holding onto me too tightly as Toothless glided across the sea, his wings dipping down slightly to penetrate the water surface. It was quite nice, and reminded me of our flight before,

when it had been so perfect, and he wasn't scared witless the entire time. He pulled me closer, though not from fear this time, it was gentler hold, almost like he wanted to hold me. I felt a weight settle on my shoulder and jumped, glancing around to see what it was.

It was his chin, resting there.

A blush spread across my cheeks, he looked so happy I didn't want to say anything, but I was sure he could feel my body heating up a thousand degrees.

Toothless seemed to realise it and dipped his wing further into the water, spraying me with water and effectively cooling me.

"Aw, Toothless, I'm soaked." He complained, but he didn't move himself from me. I giggled slightly at that, despite being wet myself it wasn't too bad, not enough to make me ill or anything.

We kept flying after that, Toothless content to take us anywhere with no distinct destination. Though, as we neared the wall of perpetual fog his ears perked up and the leisurely pace picked up dramatically. It was hard to keep hold of him at first, the change from a relaxing stroll to a sprint was very unexpected. I felt Arden's arms tighten around me much too quickly cutting off my air, though I soon grew accustomed to it.

"Toothless, Toothless, what's wrong?" I asked, fearing something was chasing us that I didn't know about. Of course he couldn't answer us as he flew quicker than I had ever seen him. Hunkering down to avoid being thrown off into the jaws of whatever was after us, or causing drag to slow us down and the thing catching up. I wasn't sure what was worse.

"What's going on?" Arden asked, having to raise his voice to be heard over the wind in my ears.

"I don't know." Was all I could say back, if he heard it or not was completely questionable.

We were flying through the fog, unable to see for than an inch in front of our faces, as far as I was concerned Toothless was headless now too. We dipped and weaved around, the reason for passing me seconds later. There were huge yet still tiny islands scattered around.

It was incredible, not many from the village had ventured out into this fog, and those that did got lost and were forced to turn back, none of the men thinking to bring a map. Now we were being taken through it by someone who knew exactly where to go. Unless he was just a very convincing liar.

We flew silently for a while, concentrating on not letting ourselves stray out from Toothless' body, no one knew what was out there and there were no chances for mistakes when you were travelling as fast as we were.

"Toothless, where're we going?" I asked, not really expecting a response but just reminding him that he had passengers. He didn't seem to hear me, flying along as though the weight on his back was no

more than a fly.

The fog seemed to be getting denser, that or we were flying through quicker than humanly possible, the islands seemed to be getting closer, so much so that I had to suck myself in to avoid being scraped by the rocks.

If I squinted I was sure I could see things in the fog, moving just as quickly as we were. Though some were moving towards us. What they were I wasn't sure but I knew I'd find out if we carried on this route.

I'd given up trying to talk to Toothless, he seemed far too focused on his current objective. I could feel Arden shaking behind me, his fingers tensing on my shirt. No doubt he was scared of flying again.

"Ahhh!" I jumped at the scream in my ear, turning to see what had caused it only to be facing a large round dragon, and one I'd definitely seen before. Arden was pressed heavily against me, trying to force himself away from the dragon who was desperately trying to keep up with the rest, a large sheep hanging in its mouth. The little fluff ball in his mouth 'baa'ed though it sounded anything but scared even in the large dragon's mouth.

"There are other dragons?" I asked myself, I had been hoping that Toothless and the others were one of a kind.

"I don't think I like other dragons." Arden muttered, shuffling closer. It was cute seeing him like that. It was almost as though this was the real him and all the rest was just bravado. Ever since I started getting to know him I had been shocked at how much he defied my logic, he didn't fit with what I had pictured him as, who I had thought he was. And after all I'd been through with him it only made me like him more.

I just hope he holds himself when we arrive wherever we're going. Because in the distance, stood against all the fog was a large towering mountain and all the faint fading shapes ahead of us were going there.

****please read review****

48. Chapter 48

As we neared the oversized mountain the stench of brimstone hit me like a wall, that wasn't a mountain. It was a damn volcano. I seriously contemplated jumping off and swimming back, because I knew well and truly that Toothless was taking us there. Why? I'd rather not know. Honestly.

The fog parted as we neared the mountain and it was only then that I saw the thin stream of smoke rising from within, looking as though it was dancing in the light wind.

"My gods it's a volcano." Arden whispered, leaning over me, somewhere in his mind his fear of flying didn't include a fear of standing up on a moving dragon while staring at an active volcano.

"Arden sir down!" I hissed, Toothless hadn't slowed down at all and was flying, the dragon that was gaining on us previously was long gone in the fog behind us and as I tore my eyes off of the volcano to stare around I saw something that sent my blood running cold. Dozens, no, hundreds of dragons were barrelling into the mouth of the volcano their large jaws holding tightly onto different objects. And much to my disgust some looked like people, kicking and screaming. I buried my face in my hands as Toothless led us towards that very mouth, a horrible thought jamming itself in my mind. Toothless was going to sacrifice us to the volcano.

I was no longer controlling the tail fin, the wind picking up so much around the volcano that it moved on its own, stronger than my leg could hold. I grabbed onto the saddle tightly as we were pulled up the side of the sheer cliff, Arden's arms tight around my chest and my head bowed down low. I didn't want to see.

My hair rushed back, and I could only imagine what Arden's face looked like swallowed in my longish hair. I couldn't breathe my screams being pushed into the back of my throat.

And with a jolt we went from vertical to horizontal. Changing so quickly that I still couldn't get my screams out. Which was probably a good thing. Calming down somewhat quickly I plug my mouth, stopping any sounds coming out. Toothless was slowly flying across the mouth of the volcano dropping in once we managed to compose ourselves.

Something that immediately flew out of the window when I saw the bottomless pit the dragons were throwing out food into. I saw everything from large fish to villagers. Wincing as I watched a man my father knew being thrown into the pit I held onto Toothless. He seemed to finally regain his bearings and I hoped for him to take us away from this and back home. But, instead he dipped into the volcano and tucked himself around a wall of thick frozen lava.

I was tempted to reach out and touch it but was far too transfixed with watching food be dropped into the hole.

"This is where all our food is going? All our people? It's horrible. And wasteful, they're just dropping it into a hole."

"Maybe they're storing it?" I suggested, not really listening to him.

As I was about to turn to speak with him I saw a small knobbly dragon, a Grockle, hover over the pit and spit up a small fish, something Toothless would scoff at. He looked quite proud of himself as he slowly flapped away, one of his wings looking a little damaged. I feared he wouldn't be able to get out of the pit before his wing gave out.

Seemed I wouldn't have to worry about that as a large knobbly head that would have struck fear into the coldest of Viking's hearts popped out and snapped its humungous jaws around the Grockle swallowing it as though it were a measly crumb. Screaming I begged Toothless to start flying as a large dark eye locked on us.

"Run! Fly! Do anything Toothless!" I begged, and thankfully he complied, spreading his wings wide and flapping off like a bat out of

hell. We had to cling on as he flew, taking us up vertically before the dragon's deadly jaws could snap at us and take us whole.

"Faster, it's coming after us!" Arden cried, a loud crumbling sound following his words as the dragon pulled down lava walls to pull it up higher. Toothless flapped his wings madly, and I was sure I could feel his breath quickening, he was just as scared as we were.

Powerful jaws snapped at us, and only by the snapping of his tail fin in a direction it wasn't supposed to go did we escape, flying upside down momentarily before being righted and flying back towards Berk.

Rain be damned.

It seemed to give up chasing us before we even made it completely out of the volcano, the large thing either getting stuck or deciding a few morsels weren't worth the effort to take.

I held onto Toothless tightly, my foot aching in the stirrup as I slowly tested it, low creaking sounds pulling from the object.

"Stop it," Arden snapped and I instantly complied, he sounded stressed out to the nth degree. "I don't want to be flying into the sea any time soon. Sorry." He added seconds later, as though listening to himself.

"It's alright, we're heading back to Berk." I responded, trying to turn the tail back in the direction we were going. It was very loose and wasn't doing a particularly good job of keeping the tail open, the fin was barely open enough to keep them at their current height.

We flew back in silent, the storm having passed over Berk and pouring over the sea. The sun was long gone and a small moon was peeking from behind the clouds.

Despite the less than fully functioning tail I managed to get him back to the cliff, my heart still hammering as he landed heavily, dust rising from his heavy paws. We slid off his back, Arden going straight around to check on his tail while I looked for the demonic head. It hadn't seemed to be following us but for all I knew it could turn itself invisible.

The very thought sent shivers down my spine and I was barely able to turn my back to the sky and focus on the dragon, Arden tugging at something on his side. Instead of asking I sidled up to him and glanced over his shoulder, his crouching form so intent on whatever he was doing that he didn't even notice.

What I saw confused me, he was pulling strings from his shirt. Not talking I simply watched him as he measured it up with the tail, nodding when it met the snapped cable in the fin. So that was the problem, at least I wouldn't have to remake the entire tail.

"This should work right?" He asked, laying the bundle of threads on Toothless' saddle. "If I can plat these and attach them to the saddle I should be able to keep the tail working." I couldn't hide my shock

at his ingenuity, it hadn't struck me that we could use our clothes, I had assumed that we'd be forced to replace a large portion of the tail in order to get it into proper condition again. But if we're able to make this strong enough using just string from our clothes then it should be able to hold for quite a while.

"Yeah, and if not it'll be a good substitute for a while." I added, watching as he platted the string and attached it to the tail before removing the snapped connector.

"This might be a good thing actually. At least now we know the weakness of the tail and we can fix it."

"I suppose. But I also know we're late back. Our parents are going to forget who we are at this rate." I laughed slightly to myself sitting on the edge of the island waiting for Arden to finish testing his new attachment.

"Ready to go?" Nodding I climbed back to my feet, a wave of tiredness washing over me as I climbed onto the saddle, the day's events having caught up to me quickly. Or maybe I was just exhausted from my emotions being strained thanks to that god awful dragon? Shaking it off I waited for Arden to climb on too, Toothless rolled his eyes at us once he settled on. "Off we go Toothless."

He rose his wings before slumping to the side, dropping down on his large side, the two of us thankfully being thrown off or we'd have been trapped. Scrambling to my feet I rushed over, checking him, what was wrong? Had he been hurt? Was it the hunters? Had they managed to shoot him somehow?

"Calm down Sarah, he's asleep." My head snapped up, levelling on his eyes and I saw he was breathing calmly, his eyes closed. Oh, I knew that. I could hear him chuckling not too far behind me, spinning to face him I gave him my best pouty face, though that only made him laugh more.

"You're horrible." I pouted, slapping his chest with the back of my hand lightly, he feigned hurt and grinned.

"Come on, we might as well start climbing, it'll be a long way back home."

It was a long way home, made worse by the poor light, neither of us too familiar with this specific part of the forest. We took turns leading, Arden at the front as we finally managed to leave the woods and return to the village.

There were a few watchers, stood holding torches and covered by their wives umbrellas. They looked a picture, large burly big bearded men holding small little umbrellas covered in flowers or polka dots.

We were forced to resort to tricks commonly seen in movies to get past them. Throwing a stone against buildings near them to draw them away. I had to admit though, it was very fun. If not a little heart racing. I felt like a rebellious child sneaking out to meet her boyfriend. At that thought my face flushed and I was grateful for the dim lighting hiding my pink cheeks.

We were near Arden's home, the light in the front room on and glowing

out against the pavement.

"I'll see you tomorrow." He whispered, standing straight for what had to be the first time in half an hour. I could hear his spine crack as it was forced to straighten out and stood tall too, knowing I wouldn't get a chance for a short while as I made my way back home.

"Yeah, I'll see you...do you know what day it is?" He shook his head, grinning shyly, "well, if it's a school day I'll see you at school."

"And if not I'll see you at Toothless'" He seemed to hesitate a moment before leaning close to me and kissing my cheek softly. My mind ground to a stop as he gave another shy smile and ran inside, leaving me blushing like a mad woman.

I decided to post this earlier than normal to celebrate the new year. Happy New Year everyone. Please read review

49. Chapter 49

As soon as I got home I ran to my room blushing bright red and giggling quietly. He kissed me! We hadn't done anywhere near that for a while and I figured it was a mistake that he wanted to forget so I hadn't brought it up. But he kissed me!

I fell onto my bed hiding my face in the pillow, I was acting as if he'd asked me to marry him not just a peck on the cheek.

I forced myself to sleep once I got myself under control, curling in on myself and thinking though some topic I can't remember before falling asleep.

I could smell some faintly burning coming up the stairs and wrinkled my nose at the horrid smell. The clock in my room flashed that it was half eight as I forced myself up, unable to sleep more. Even if it was horrible my stomach rumbled at the thought of eating something non-fish related.

I got dressed quickly, running downstairs both for the food and to see why the burning smell was getting worse. What I saw was my father sat by the kitchen table slumped over it with food cooking behind him.

Turning the oven off before it caught fire I shook him awake.

"Dad, what are you doing?"

"Uh, what, who?" He looked up through tired eyes, "Oh, Sarah, I was just cooking breakfast."

"Breakfast is burned dad, why were you sleeping?"

"Well, I didn't sleep much last night, I was worried about you." A shard of guilt imbedded itself in my heart hearing that. I gave him a quick hug before turning the oven off and throwing the burnt food away, it resembled coal more than food at the moment anyway.

"I'm sorry."

"No, no, it's not your fault you got caught in the rain, I'm just glad you had somewhere to shelter." I glanced across at him watching as he took in a deep breath. Poor dad, I'd really been causing him trouble these past few days. I was so meek, mild-mannered and well behaved before, he probably has no idea what to do about me.

"I'll be here for as long as I can today."

"Sarah, tell me something and tell me straight." He took a deep breath. "Are you seeing someone?" My face flared red as Arden's face popped into my head, I didn't know what to say. Were we seeing each other? I wasn't sure, he kissed me but that doesn't mean we're dating. Does it?

"I-I, uh..." As much as I wanted and probably should say no the words couldn't come out, it was as though there was a block in my throat that held the words back.

"Sarah, you're getting older I can't change that, but, if that boy hurts you I'll kill him." From the look in his eyes I could see he was very serious about that. I wanted to laugh, to tell him there was no other boy, but I was never very good at lying and even if the two of us weren't dating he'd know I was seeing a boy regularly.

"Ok." A smile crossed his lips as he sat back in his chair, suddenly changing topics.

"Did you hear, last night three of our men were taken by that cat." My head whipped towards him painfully, a tug in the muscles at the base of my neck forcing me to grab them and hiss in pain.

"Taken?" I managed to ask.

"Yes, the hunters that came to deal with it are out there following the beasts trail. They say they think they cornered it. I'm thinking of speaking with them later." A shiver ran down my spine at the thought of them knowing where Toothless was, especially after we went through all that trouble to move and hide him again. It felt a bit like hide and seek.

"Well, I hope whatever is causing this is caught soon." I gave a diplomatic answer, smiling awkwardly, shifting on my spot as he stared at me intently for a moment.

"We all do, the village us under tremendous strain because of these tragedies. I've decided to close the schools down until the animal is caught, I've received notices from dozens of people saying they want to have their kids at home with them." My head snapped towards him at that, eyes wide as I stared at him. I hadn't suspected something like that. I wouldn't have been surprised if all those requests were from those hunters, they must be trying to keep the families together to make it easier on keeping tabs on people. "Unfortunately for us though, we can't spend our time together. I'm helping them with their work on catching that cat and you can't come because it's far too dangerous."

I tried to look disappointed and from the sad smile he gave in return it seemed I'd succeeded.

"Eat up, I'll be leaving in a short while,"

"Dad, you're far too tired right now to help with anything. If anything you'll hinder them."

"Nonsense. I gave them my word that I would help." His large hand ruffled my hair as he turned to head upstairs. I stared after him, trying to decide what to do. Yes I needed to see Toothless but if I left it to Arden I'm sure he would cope. Could I skip a morning, or however long my dad was here, to spend some time with him, even if it was only a few seconds properly together and the rest existing in different rooms.

I decided to, and I was very glad for my own decision. He left a little after one and before then we watched a little TV in his room while he napped, I told him, lies, about my days at school and stories of my friends. Friend would have been more accurate but he didn't need to know I only had one real friend. I even told him I had a crush, I wasn't specific, no, I wasn't that insane. But, I told him, and despite his promise that if he ever hurt me he'd kill him he took it surprisingly well.

I left just a few minutes after he did and was constantly thinking of what I should have said. Things that were funny or interesting that had happened in my life while I was being a rebellious teenager. I couldn't stop myself from smiling like an idiot, it was stupid, I kept so much from my dad before and now I wanted to tell him everything.

Shaking every thought from my head I grabbed my shoes and began to slip them on, wondering where Arden would be at this time. Before I could wonder too much the doorbell rang. Jumping at the loud noise not too far from my head I stood pulling the door open and being confronted by Arden a large smile on his face.

"Hey, I fed Toothless. Where were you?" I watched as he scratched at his head, looking as if he was restraining from slapping himself. "I mean what are you doing here?"

"I stayed with me dad, the school's been shut down and unlike most we can't spend time together. So I took advantage."

"Really? Huh, I didn't hear anything about the school being closed. But then again I haven't really seen my mum much." He stepped from the doorway to let me pass by, grabbing my body warmer as I went, the fake brown fur soft against my skin. "At least this means that we won't be missing anymore school work." I let out a short awkward laugh, yeah, that was true. Thinking about it the closing school was a blessing for us. We were far behind already but at least now we wouldn't be even more behind.

"Come on, let's go get Toothless. I wanna go near the volcano again and see if the dragons are still there." A tight hand clasped onto my shoulder, halting anymore movement.

"What the hell did you just say? I'm telling you know Sarah, no chance in hell are we ever going back to that godforsaken place." His eyes were so intense, I found I couldn't deny him. He looked both determined to get his own way and terrified I wouldn't

listen.

"Fine, fine. I won't. Let's go though, I do wanna see Toothless today."

"Thank you." He breathed a long sigh of relief, smiling slightly before leading me away from my house.

Toothless' POV

Curling up in my new home I stare out at the tree tops. If I wanted I could fly off, but I was content here. The two humans would be here soon. The male had brought me my food but she wasn't anywhere to be seen. He looked worried about her, if I didn't know better I would think the two were mates.

As I stared out waiting for them to return my mind falls back to the previous day. What had happened to me? I hadn't felt like that for such a long time, the feeling of my senses being taken over by an all-encompassing aura, my mind giving in and bending to its will like a trained monkey.

A shiver runs down my spine at the memory, it was horrible, how being in control of myself. Not being able to think more than two seconds before my body acted of its own accord. And what was worse was this wasn't the first time it had happened. It had happened more times than I've taken breaths. I had just wished that it wouldn't have followed me.

That blasted dragon, that evil witch, still having control over me after all these days. Curse her, damn her to hell.

My rant was cut short by the sound of footsteps nearing my home and what can only be described as tumbling rocks as they tried to climb up the cliff face. Pushing myself up I hung my head over the side, coming face to face with my two human friends. They jumped slightly when my face appeared over the ledge, the female slipping down slightly, that must have hurt her fragile hands. Humans, they're so weak.

Moving back to allow them space to grab onto the top ledge I sat silently, watching their hands clasp for the imbedded stones to pull them up. That looked strange sliding up the side of the ledge but I didn't think any more of it as Sarah had returned.

"Hey Toothless." She greeted, my strange name sounding different as she said it. Almost as though it were happier. I sniffed the air, wondering if I'd catch any hint. She didn't seem to have mated with the male but one could never be too cautious. I tilted my head to the side hoping my silent question got across. "I spent the morning with my dad. That's why I wasn't here. It was nice. I rarely get time with him anymore." She explained after a few seconds of wondering. I was surprised she figured it out so quickly.

I gave a small nod of the head, showing I understood her clearly. Though I suppose I didn't. I'd never had a father, how was I to understand the mind of one? Never matter, she seemed pleased with my words.

"I knew you'd understand." She patted my face, her skin warm with

small pebbles of gravel still stuck to the pad. She dusted one hand off, seeming to spot the problem. "What are we going to do today?" She asked, the question directed to both of us despite the fact that I was incapable to respond.

"Practice flying, we need to make sure nothing like yesterday happens again. Just because we got away doesn't mean we will if it happens again." I couldn't disagree with him, the vile queen of the island would be back. She hated to lose and wouldn't take this lying down.

"Fine, we'll set off in a minute, let me pick the stones from my hands first."

He sat down, slowly plucking the pits of debris from his skin, seemed I'd caused more harm than intended when looking for them, I can imagine it would hurt their puny scale-less skin.

****please read review****

50. Chapter 50

Arden's POV

I took my time cleaning my hands and almost ten minutes later we were ready, Toothless stood at the edge of the cliff stretching out his wings while Sarah checked his tail. I stared out at the tops of the trees, it was therapeutic to look across the thick branches and see the sky in the distance.

"Alright, we're all good, let's go, I want to try and do this right. You'll have to try next though, there can't be only one flyer." I went to argue, opening my mouth as I made my way to his saddle, only to close it. I didn't have any excuse to use. And the more I thought about it the more it made sense. What if she was injured and needed rescuing? I couldn't let her down.

Climbing on I wrapped my arms around her waist and held tight, my cheeks reddening at being so close. I was glad she couldn't see me or I'd turn into a tomato.

I could feel Toothless preparing to take off, a little sluggishly, he had just woken up. He leapt into the air, his wings expanding and gliding for the first few seconds before he took one powerful flap of them and rose high into the sky, above the cloud cover.

We flew around for almost half an hour, Sarah testing his tail as much as she could without giving me a heart attack in the process. We had travelled out onto the sea to practice diving away from the watchful eyes of the hunters.

Large rocks sculptures naturally scattered the area, forming the best training course in her opinion. I spent the majority of the first trip around clinging onto her and screaming internally. I wasn't able to look around until the third trip. And by that time she'd gotten fairly good, she looked pleased with herself. She landed him on a rock sculpture in the middle of the water, the arc like stone more than big enough for us to swap places but a twinge of fear balled itself in my stomach.

I stood on the stone, arms stretched out wide to stay on my feet. The wind wasn't very strong, but it was just enough to give an unstable feeling. My eyes were firmly fixed at eye level, never dipping down to glance at my feet or anything in that direction. My heart still pounded intensely in my ears, drumming against the inside of my skull and paining me.

I made my way towards the front of the saddle, moving my feet a few millimetres forwards at a time. I could feel her annoyance burning into the back of my head but at the same time she didn't rush me. Seeming to understand that I needed my time, I was still getting over my fear after all.

Climbing onto his back I held on tightly, feeling the saddle shift slightly as she got on behind, my heart speeding up as she wrapped her arms around my waist.

"Are we going?" She asked after what must have been a long silence.

"Uh, uh, uh yeah, um, let's go." I fumbled, my words falling from my lips half formed making me sound idiotic. She laughed, the sound of her voice picking me up a few good notches, even if I did have the mother of all blushes on my face.

He took off, flapping his wings strongly a few times before levelling out. I wasn't sure if it were just me but he seemed to be going slower the small islands and rocks below us passing under our dangling feet at a snail's pace. I couldn't hide my relief at that, knowing that Toothless understood and wasn't racing ahead like he would with Sarah. It was almost pleasant like this, the wind barely brushing against me as I took my time to find the right angle for the tail to fall into to fly straight.

I had watched how Sarah had done in numerous times, how even the slightest change could alter the position massively and potentially lead to our death. I glanced back and forth between the tail and the peddle quickly, not looking forwards, the expansion of blue sky and water not appealing as much as ensuring I don't make us plummet to our deaths.

Clicking it into a new position the tail altered and we veered to the right. His body seeming to freeze as he took a wide turn. Panic welled up in me at that, my immediate thought being that I'd hurt him or something along similar lines. I returned it to the other position once we were fifty or so degrees to the right, and thankfully he moved from his rigid position.

Taking in large gulps of breath I could feel a hand on my chest sooth me. It was relaxing, reassuring and I couldn't thank her enough for it. Forcing even more calmness through me I slouched, relaxing against her. Though it was fairly obvious I was as rigid as a nail, this one just happened to be bent too.

"Don't get too calm. You need to stay focused." She chastised softly, I could feel a small smile work onto my lips. I'm not sure why but it made me happy to hear her worry about me. Though it could just be because she doesn't want to die because of me.

Sitting up a little straighter I sent Toothless down, closer to the water, my heart speeding up rapidly as we dipped. Every fibre of my being screaming at me to stop. And I did, just as his toes grazed the water's surface I levelled us out and allowed him to glide slowly across the top. He would dip his toes in subtly spraying us with the lightest sprits of water.

I could hear a quiet laughter from behind and glanced back quickly to see what was wrong. She shook her head, nothing, and continued to chuckle to herself happily.

"Sorry, I'm not laughing at you. I'm just so relieved, I could just see us going underwater and not coming up." She spoke into my ear, her chin resting against my shoulder and her hands tightening around me. I would have nodded in acknowledgement but I was much more focused on not accidentally head-butting her.

My feet were shaking in the stirrups as what I had just done hit me like a ton of bricks. I had been practically daring. Brave or stupid? Both seemed like logical answers.

"Bet you can't go upside down." I know she's taunting me, pushing me to do something she knows I can't do. But for some reason I'm feeling cocky enough to give it a go.

Despite feeling the regret bubble in my stomach at an alarming rate I clicked his tail down, forcing him to follow and sending us feet up. Even though I caused it I still found myself screaming in shock and terror, a large part of me being convinced that it wouldn't work and we'd stay the right way up.

Silencing myself I clutched onto Toothless like a koala, hating myself and my idiotic confidence. Which of course left me the second I committed to this. Had I had the courage I'd have turned and yelled at Sarah for managing to make me do it. But if I was honest it was bravado that tipped me over the edge. Bailing out quickly I flipped us back the right way up, blood rushing from my brain back to every other cell in my body and giving me intense pins and needles. I felt sick, the taste of bile worming its way into my throat and making me curse myself all the more.

"Why did I do that?" I asked myself, hating every part of my being for allowing myself to be so easily led.

"I don't know. I almost fell off though. I didn't think you'd actually do it, I was just teasing you." She giggled into my back, her arms tight around my waist and her head rested on my shoulder. "I'm proud enough that you've gotten onto him in the first place." I could feel a blush worm its way onto my face at her words.

"You could have said that before I made an idiot of myself."

"Well, you did deafen me with your pterodactyl scream." She giggled softly to herself at that, my face burning in embarrassment.

"Shut up." I turned him around, heading back towards the cave, hoping that I didn't get any more idiotic ideas that could lead to me needing to change my trousers. The very thought of something like that happening with Sarah around causing me to blush profusely.

I landed us with minor difficulty, but considering what had happened a little shakiness was understandable. Sliding off of him I patted his head and I could almost swear he shook his head at me. Probably as surprised as Sarah was at what I'd done.

Pushing that memory to the very back of my mind I turned to her, opening my mouth to speak but before a sound left my lips my stomach rumbled loudly, embarrassing me further.

"Should we head back then? Get something warm from the shops?" She offered, the idea of warm food very appealing to me. Almost as if to remind us of his presence Toothless' stomach grumbled too. "Yes, yes Toothless I know, we'll fetch you some too."

"Hey Sarah," I interrupted, grasping onto her arm as a thought ran through my head. "Why don't we just take him to catch the fish from here? I mean, we are by the sea. We could have done that. While you're taking him I'll fetch us something warm." I could see that she hadn't thought of that and beamed with pride at her subtle head nod.

"That sounds ok. Don't forget where to come to. Off you go. You've got a long way to walk." I raised my brow when I saw her sit on the edge of the cliff after shooing me off. "I'm not taken him off yet, he hasn't even rested yet." Nodding I began to leave, already wondering what I could buy her, so caught in my mind I didn't think to just ask.

Sorry it's so short. I've been really busy studying for exams at school. Please read review.

51. Chapter 51

It took me at least half an hour to reach but by the time I reached the shopping strip there was only one man left, and he was selling fish. The one thing I didn't want. Warm or not. The thought made me gag. Still, I suppose it was much better than the slimy things that came from Toothless' mouth.

Ordering two I hopped back and forth on my foot, fiddling around for my wallet and hoping I could find it. I could, but just barely, it was as if it were hiding from me in the corner of my pocket.

Exchanging money for food I carefully walked back. Hers wrapped completely in a small bag while I picked at mine. It was much nicer than the fish Toothless fed us, there were no scales to eat through or slime from his throat from when he threw it up. It was delicious.

Picking up my pace slightly I started to jog back towards his cliff, conscious of the fact that her food would be cold otherwise. Wrapping my own food back up I sped up all the more.

Hiccup's POV

I took Toothless back out just a few minutes after Arden left, his stomach rumbling to the point of insanity. He dived for the water without care of whether or not I got wet, already my hair was

dripping and my shirt was sticking uncomfortably to my chest. We'd managed to catch a small cod and were hunting down a larger salmon. His tongue was hanging from his mouth and his own version of a smile was pulled across his face, though it looked much less cute what the few times he'd done it before as his teeth were on proud display.

I changed the angle of his tail slightly and drew him closer to the water's edge, the fish was just millimetres from his jaws and SNAP! He plucked it from the ground and held it triumphantly in his mouth. It flopped in his teeth for a few seconds before he swallowed it whole, letting out a satisfied purr when it landed in his stomach.

"Should we get a couple more and head back?" I knew he usually ate three times what I was suggesting, but it would take an incredibly long time to catch all those fish and I wanted my food as well. He begrudgingly agreed, taking us back slower than we'd left, and bobbing every now and again to scoop up the smaller fish.

We landed a short while after Arden was back, it couldn't have been too long though because he was still picking through the second half of his food.

"Yours is in the bag. They didn't have anything else." Taking the bag from him I pulled out my still warm food, happily digging into it. It tasted so nice, it wasn't cold and slimy fish but crispy and lightly vinegared. "Did you manage to find him something to eat?"

"We did. We didn't get much though. I'll probably have to go with him again later to find something for filling. He's probably burning more than he's eating." I looked over him, smiling as he curled in on himself and sighed dejectedly at his stomach.

He wasn't exactly happy. I wanted to sympathise with him, but if we are to feed him now by the time we got back our food would be ruined. I ate slowly, turning my back to Toothless so he doesn't have to worry about looking.

It took a short while to finish, Arden lying back on the ground and staring up at the sun, shielding his eyes from the glare as he patted his stomach, looking very pleased with himself.

"Give me a few minutes and I'll go catch him some food. I know a couple tricks to finishing thanks to my dad." He boasted. I rolled my eyes at him, crumpling up the paper my food had come in wondering what to do with it. I couldn't just throw it away, as I was thinking I heard Toothless let out a small spit, the paper in my hand lighting up rapidly almost burning my hand. I managed to drop it without being singed and watched it burn from existence.

I wanted to tell him off for doing that while it was still in my hand but the small smile on his face and his wide green eyes stopped me, he had helped me out, he was probably happy with himself. Patting his head instead I leaned back and rested my head against his side.

"What're we going to do with you?" I wondered aloud, what were we going to do? I wasn't sure what was happening or where we were supposed to be going. The hunters, they were working without us knowing what they were doing and my dad he was spending time with

them having his brain washed.

He let out a snort as he curled around me, his tail holding me to his chest. Guess it wasn't something he cared about. That or he just wanted me to shut up. But now that I'd opened that box I couldn't close it as easily. What were we going to do?

If the hunters left and Toothless was safe what then? It wasn't as if we could keep him forever in secret, hiding in the mountains away from the village hoping no one stumbled upon him. And what about the twins? They were bound to tell people about this. Why they hadn't so far was beyond me. I wasn't sure what had happened with Ruff and Tuffnut, I suppose I just expected Arden to take care of it and had presumed he has.

Staring up at the sky I closed my eyes. Letting myself sunbath in the small rays of sun leftover.

Tuffnut's POV

I was with my stupid sister in the woods trying to find something.

"Hey what are we looking for?"

"I don't know!"

I don't know what we're looking for. And I don't know how long we've been here trying to figure it out. We've been here looking for so long that I kind of forgot and ended up just looking at random objects going 'nope'. Ruff was doing the same thing as me. She was on the other side filming with her phone as if she were expecting something scary to pop out.

The sun was somewhat setting, light being cast over me making me look like a tired old hag.

"Have you found anything?" I yelled, stretching out my tired arms.

"Any of what?"

"I donno. Anything anything."

"No. You?"

"Nothing. Should we give up?"

"I guess." I wasn't sure why we'd been trying for so long to be honest. We had to have been at this for like two hours.

Looking around for my jacket I tripped over something half buried in the ground. Grabbing it I brought it to my face and stared at it confused. It looked an awful lot like a gun. It was a gun!

"Ahh!" I dropped the gun to the ground kicking it far away from me and towards my sister, who'd jumped at my shout.

"What? What is it?"

"There was a bloody gun in the ground!" I yelled, gesturing everywhere unable to control my limbs properly.

"Gun! But that's not possible. No one has guns here."

"Well, someone clearly does."

"But, but, Berk's a quiet place. No one needs these things."

"Oh my god! There's a murderer hiding in Berk!" I concluded, my eyes scanning everywhere for that murderous fiend.

"You know what, it's probably just one of those hunters. We should return it."

"Hey good idea, get some brownie points." My attention immediately left the murderer and turned to getting some good points for a change. Who knew what these hunter type people gave out as treats? Maybe money? The thought excited me as I dusted the gun down and slid it into the inside pocket of my jacket, patting it fondly as I thought of what it could give me. "Come on, let's go my horrifying sister. Our prize awaits." I could see her roll her eyes at me, laughing at myself I headed off, hearing her follow quietly behind.

We left in silence, my thoughts on the gun. I was curious. I'd never so much as seen a knife outside of the kitchen before. Crime wasn't a problem here in Berk. And if it was whatever was stolen was given back by the end of the week. Why would the hunter guys need a gun? We were told it was being caught and taken away. Not killed.

It didn't take long during our search to find them, they were the only ones outside, people always ran when they saw them expecting the cat to be near. That reminds me, why are they looking for a cat? I've never seen one. I did see a giant reptile though. Best tell them. Deciding that I headed over to them, waving my arm high in the sky to attract their attention, Ruff following close behind.

"Hey guys!" They looked at me more than a little confused. Probably wondering why someone was still out.

"Tuffnut, what are you doing here? It's dangerous, go home." The familiar voice shocked me. Stoic? Why was he here then?

"We came to return something." I answered easily, pulling out the gun and holding out at arm's length. Stoic looked shocked by the sight of it, grasping it from my hands and checking to see if it were real.

"Where did this come from? Guns are not allowed on this island."

"Beats me, I figured these guys had dropped it."

"That rule applies to them too, guns aren't to be here for this exact reason. Idiots like you'll find them and end up killing each other."

"We apologise Stoic, however these are merely tranquilisers. They have enough juice to drop an elephant for three days, but are

relatively harmless to humans." The hunter stated, taking the gun from Tuff's hands and opening it to reveal the tranquiliser darts.

"Aww, what a rip off. I was hoping for some real bullets." I complained, folding my arms over my chest and puffing my cheeks out.

"Yes I apologise. Thank you for finding these, they could have been fairly dangerous to untrained handlers." The hunter smiled, though the way his face contorted suggested it was a rarity that he did.

"Oh yeah, and I was wonderin' how do you know you're after a mountain cat?" Ruff backed me with a 'yeah' though she sounded like she was trying to pick a fight.

"Of course we are sure. Why do you ask?"

"Well cos, I've never seen a mountain cat but I've seem twenty foot scaly monsters." His face fell in shock or disbelief I couldn't tell. Maybe both, all I knew was that his hand started to shake while he tried to let out a chuckle. It was kinda obvious that he hadn't prepared for this kind of outcome where others knew of this. Come to think about it did he know about Arden and Hiccup?

"What are you talking about? Twenty foot reptiles? Preposterous." I stared at him for a long moment, what the hell did that mean? I watched them closely as they stared at me equally as dangerous.

I watched as he tucked the gun away, grabbing my shoulder and pulling me away from the others so we can talk quietly to each other. I stood facing him, my hand resting on my hip as he paced slowly he looked slightly stressed and I very nearly asked why but decided against it.

"I need you to answer some questions for me. Naturally I expect truthful answers." I nodded. I could feel what could only be described as dread welling inside me. Something told me I'd made a mistake. I shouldn't have handed them the gun and I definitely shouldn't have mentioned that dragon. Whatever it was called. "What do you know?"

He leaned in closer to me, his body towering over and the faint smell of blood filling my nose, but it wasn't human blood. Gulping heavily I tried to pull up my cocky attitude but he'd squashed that effectively. "About what?"

"The dragon."

My eyes widened, that was why he was here! Damn it, I've messed up!

Hopefully this all makes sense. My computer glitched out on me and all the work I had on it got forced into one document. I tried to restore it as best as I could but there might be some oddity in there somewhere. Sorry. Please read review.

I didn't know what to say, all I could do was open my mouth like a fish and gape at him. But he knew I knew, he did. From my less than shocked reaction at the word dragon and my panic at myself making it pretty clear.

"I thought so. Tell me, is it those kids who told you? The blond boy and brunette girl."

"Ah, um, what if it was?"

"I'd have to dispose of them."

"Dispose! Like, kill. But you can't do that, you're the good guy, right? Good guys never kill."

"I may be the good guy, but they're helping that dragon elude us. That dragon is a danger to the entire world!" My mouth hung open as he spoke in a rushed hush. But Arden, I didn't care about Hiccup she could do as she pleased but Arden, I couldn't betray him. Dangerous dragon or no I've made a mistake and I've gotta fix it.

"Listen pally, you're getting nothing out of me. Whatever I know you can shove it cos you're not knowing." I declared, kicking him hard in the shin before running off and grabbing my sister as I passed.

"What are you doing you idiot?" She yelled at me though she still ran. I could hear Stoic calling after us in confusion, probably baffled by my strange behaviour.

"Listen, I shouldn't have said anything. I gotta find Arden."

"Where is he?" I stopped running once I turned a corner.

"I don't know."

"Did you tell them anything?"

"Not really."

"Then there's no point telling him."

"Oh yeah." The panic in me instantly washed away and I stood there looking at her wondering why I was so worked up. Who knew. Shrugging I started walking slowly back to our house. "Let's go home. I'm sleepy."

"You're an idiot." She muttered as she followed closely behind. What were we going to do now? I still felt like something had to be done. I dunno maybe I'm just hungry. Probably.

"Let's go eat."

"Shut up you idiot and don't boss me around."

"I wasn't,"

"Yeah, right."

"I wasn't. Ugh, girls."

We ended up going for something to eat anyway after our stomachs growled louder than any of those dragons we saw. We went home for it though, I don't wanna spend too much time in the open now I'd potentially got the hunters on my back.

"Will you stop fidgeting? You annoying." I looked up from my food and gave her a long glare before returning back to it. It wasn't my fault, I was just a little panicked about everything. "I thought you said you didn't say anything."

"I know, but I'm not sure. They're smart aren't they?!" She laughed,

"Yeah they're smart. But who cares if they are? Arden's pretty switched on too, I don't know about Hiccup. Don't really care either." I stared at her for a long minute, waiting for something to happen, what I don't know.

I tried to push it away and enjoy my meal, but I couldn't keep my mind off of them.

Hiccup's POV

Arden returned with a pile of fish and within a matter of thirty seconds they had gone down his throat.

"That took an hour." He muttered dejectedly. I chuckled softly, watching as Toothless came closer to him and nuzzled at his hand asking for more. "You just ate. There's no chance you're getting any more."

A ripple of thunder crackled through the sky making us all jump and huddle together on instinct. Where had that come from?

Looking to the darkening sky I could see clouds beginning to roll in, thick angry clouds that held gallon upon gallon of rain.

"We need to get back inside. It's going to thunder." He nodded in agreement, going to climb onto Toothless before I pulled him off.

"What?"

"Lightning strikes the highest point. I don't care how much quicker it is we'll all be dead cos of it." He looked annoyed but released him instantly, seemed he wasn't partial to an electrical current going through him any time soon.

I ushered Toothless back into his cave and bid him goodnight before letting my eyes wander over the forest towards the village. It was going to be a long walk.

We walked close to the other, trying to follow the path we took here. It was much harder than I imagined, the wind was beginning to pick up and the sky had been swallowed in darkness leaving us stumbling over tree roots and walking into things. I couldn't help feeling a little angry that I didn't have my phone but it had been dunked so many times by Toothless that it wouldn't have worked anyway.

Another crackle of thunder ran through the sky followed by a torrent of rain, our clothes soaked through in a matter of seconds. Shielding out faces with the backs of our hands we ran blindly looking for cover.

"Wait, shouldn't we not?" He yelled as I took shelter under a tall tree. "It's thundering, if we can't fly we certainly can't hide under very tall objects." I couldn't deny that, but the sheets of rain coming down didn't seem very appealing. "Come on, if we run we might make it back before we get too wet."

"I'm already drenched, I'd be drier if I were in the shower."

"Come on then." He grabbed my hand and ran back into the rain wiping at his face hurriedly to keep the water away from his eyes.

We ran mostly successful, only walking into the occasional tree and tripping over our own feet more than the actual obstacles in our paths. The village was coming into view and I ran past him to make it there first, though I didn't let go of his hand and pulled him along with me.

The village was largely deserted, only a few adults out lighting the torches and sheltering them from the rain to keep them lit. They used whatever they could get their hands on, many resorting to using their wife's umbrellas which were covered in lowers or polka dots.

"What are you kids doing out? Weren't up to no good were ya?" Someone asked, I couldn't make out their face from the rain but I could see a huge bushy beard.

"We got lost." I excused, releasing his hand quickly before the unidentified man got the wrong idea. I didn't miss the raised eyebrow from the man, who a flash of lightning revealed to be one of my father's advisors. He had a couple but he was one of the smarter ones, the others were more smash and grab with their approaches to everything.

"You better hurry then, it looks like it'll be a vicious one. Heaven knows what's bringing all these storms our way." He reached down with a large callused hand and lightly pushed at our backs, urging us forwards towards our homes.

Suddenly, a bright flash of lightning lit up the sky followed by the not too distant thunder, but once the thunder dissipated the grumbling carried on but on a quieter volume. Turning my eyes to the sky I couldn't see anything but then out of nowhere a fireball shot from the sky, hurtling towards us.

The burly man hurled himself at us, tackling us and throwing us far away from the spot the fireball smashed into.

"What the hell is that thing?!" He screamed, standing quickly and searching his belt for a weapon of some kind. There was nothing.

We couldn't see what had attacked in the sky but with a quick glance at Arden I was sure I knew what it was. A dragon.

We scrambled to our feet not sure what to do. I could feel panic

welling up inside me, dragons here? I was sure they'd come before but they'd never attacked really, there was never any fireballs coming from the sky that was for sure. Grabbing the man I dragged him with us under the shelter of a villager's roof. He looked bemused and more than a little shocked. Another fireball shot to the ground destroying the path and sending rubble everywhere.

"What in Thor's name is this?" He asked confused his voice breaking at the end as worry began to overtake him.

"It's a long story. But I'd head home and look after your family." I was shocked, Arden's voice sounded calm cool and collected only the faintest of a tremor detectable. He complied, running from the shelter of the home and taking off down the dark streets between the houses. "Well, now that he's out of the way. What the hell's going on?" The panic I'd been expecting came out full force and I slapped a hand over his mouth to keep him quiet.

"I don't know, but keep your mouth shut." The fireballs had stopped in this section but I had no doubt there'd be more. We had to get everyone inside and away from the fire breathing dragons. I inched my way to the other side of the house, leaning around the corner to check for anyone.

A loud gasp left my lips before I slammed a hand over my mouth, a large dragon was slowly skulking down the path, his heavy body swaying with each step, claws digging into the ground and leaving a clear path behind. I wasn't sure what it was called though I was positive I'd seen it in the book of dragons I'd searched back when we first found Toothless, something about its spines and broad walk stuck me as familiar.

"What is it?" He whispered quietly in my ear, so low I barely heard him, glancing across I shushed him softly, one eye staying on the wandering dragon. I wanted to answer that I didn't know but refused to open my mouth in case it heard me. I shifted even further to the edge, Arden copying me.

It turned a corner and began to wander further away.

"What is it?"

"I don't know but it's terrifying, his claws are bigger than me!" We left the safety of the house and slid into the one next door, their patio was far larger than the one we were at first. Hopefully it'd provide better protection.

"Where's the next watcher?"

"I think near Gobber's shop." That's three streets away, ordinarily that wouldn't be a problem but I had a slight problem with walking around with vicious dragons. I didn't know these dragons nor could we tame them all at once, it was a matter of run and hope for the best.

"Gobber's there's barely any shelter around his house, we'll be out in the open like sitting ducks." As we ran the ground behind us what shot with what looked like a rock covered in fire, the ground being dug out by the fireball and scattering debris.

I flinched involuntarily as the stones struck my back and arms distracting me momentarily and slowing me down. Right now not being fast enough was a very big problem.

Out of the corner of my eye I could see figures running for the dragons quickly followed by the sound of a gun and a sound that I could only describe as metal was scraping against stone. It must be the hunters, Berk weapons didn't include guns. Hand to hand combat was the main skill.

I jumped at every gun shot, the noise not familiar to me. Rain poured down, soaking me, my hair plastering to my face and covering my eyes. I really needed a haircut.

Thankfully we reached Gobber's street without running into any large dragons, just some miniature ones, I think they're Terrors but the dim lighting made it impossible to tell.

The man standing guard of the torch was flicking through his phone while he held his daughter's umbrella over the flame. We ran to him, being forced to stand in the rain because the umbrella was too small to cover all of us. He looked up seeming mildly confused at the sight of the two of us.

"What you two doin' out 'ere? Hiccup your dad's gonna kill me if he knows I saw you out in this storm."

"He won't be able to if you're dead."

"What? What're you talkin' about?" He furrowed his enormous brows, looking a mix between confused and highly amused.

Before I had chance to say anything further the ground beneath my feet disappeared, a heavy pressure over my chest forcing my down painfully. I heard a devastating crash and a broken cry of pain before everything went silent. My body surprisingly warm despite being on the cold wet ground. Glancing up I could see the dragon from before, this close up I could identify it with no doubt, a Monstrous Nightmare. It was hide, rippling with raw muscle and long razor claws, and I was pinned beneath one of the very paws, caged.

Turning my head the most I could without sliding my head off I managed to see Arden, he had been who I'd heard his body laid at the floor of a house unconscious.

Oh, Gods, what were we going to do?

****Please read review****

53. Chapter 53

Toothless' POV

My ears flickered in my sleep and I snapped awake, some instinct deep in me screaming that something was wrong. Looking out over the treetops I could see Berk, smell the sulphur in the air and see the small fires blooming on the tops of buildings. But that wasn't the only thing. I could sense imminent danger, something terrible. Something frightening.

My instincts drove themselves into a frenzy and before I knew it I'd leapt from my perch flapping my wings hastily. Unable to get more than a few feet without dropping like a stone. I landed on the top of a tall tree, my claws extending and helping me balance. I repeated the action again and again but could never make myself stay airborne for more than a few moments, it was as though someone had tied rocks to my tail.

I looked myself over, trying to find the source of my lack of flight, I didn't have time for my wings to not be working. I caught sight of my tail, one fin protruding while the other stayed folded shut. That was strange. I was sure it held itself open. Swinging it up to me I couldn't see anything but a few splintered pieces of wood. It was completely useless to me now.

Shaking that from my head I changed my plan of attack, if I couldn't fly I'd have to do something else, anything really. Balancing on the tips of the trees I prepared myself and leapt forwards, clinging onto the furthest tree I could reach. I landed and without giving myself time to fall I threw myself forwards again, carrying on again and again until my perch was far behind me and the village was steadily nearing.

Every sense was heightened as I leapt through the trees, my ears listening out for anything that sounded remotely like my two humans.

The sight of other dragons sent my blood cold. What were they doing here? There were a lot of them, more than had ever attacked the village before. Two, maybe three was the maximum I had ever seen over Berk but now, there had to be at least fifteen, maybe even twenty. If they all attacked it would end terribly.

Panic rose in my chest as I tried to find my humans. I followed the fear in my chest the tightening I felt had to be a good sign. I caught sight of them. Sarah pinned beneath a dragon with members of the village having turned up trying to free her. My eyes narrowed to slits and a sharp hiss left my throat.

How dare that dragon? He wasn't much younger than me yet he thought he would attack the human's I clearly scent marked.

Without thinking I dived for the young dragon and tackled him, throwing him off balance and demanding an explanation through a deep growl. I landed protectively over Sarah, my feet braced wide apart. I was damn near immovable.

I could feel stunned eyes all over me, eyes piercing my skin, but the only ones I cared for were behind me and when I turned I could see them on me, a mixture of relief, fear and panic spread out across her face. I wanted to ask her what was wrong but it quickly became understandable when my eyes caught sight of a man in black. He was one of the hunters, he reeked of death and misery to dragons.

My lapse in concentration caused the strike to the side of my head to hurt all the more, that dragon was trying to fight for his meal back. I winced as my head was snapped to the side my stuck out teeth bared as my attacker prepared for another swing my teeth biting through his claws like a hot knife through butter.

A growl left my throat as I glared at the dragon, he had his injured foot held up from the ground, touching the stone floor tentatively with it before deciding it was good. I could hear stirring behind me and chancing a look back I saw Arden getting up from the floor, a hand to his head.

His movement seemed to have jarred the others from their stupor because there was a large and mighty cry of something, fear, anger? I wasn't sure. But objects, stones, chairs from peoples patios, were being hurled at me and the other dragon, I managed to bat them away with my paws looking for the ring leader as I did. If I took him down the others would fall.

Catching sight of a tall ginger haired man, his beard covering the entirety of his chin and chest my eyes locked on. I tackled the dragon, forcing him to submit to me before I leapt over him, landing with my teeth grounding together.

That dragon had been overconfident, easy to push aside, but this man, he had an air about him that told of countless battles with both man and beast.

"Come at me spawn of Hell. Stay away from my daughter." He had a weapon at his belt which he removed and held tightly in his large hands, holding the axe out ready for anything I might try. I wanted to laugh, he thought that would stop me? That would stop a Terror at best.

Preparing to jump I halted when a thin but familiar body jumped in front of me, facing the large man her arms outstretched.

"Stop!" She commanded, her voice carrying far and shocking everyone into silence including me.

"Sarah, get out of the way, this thing's dangerous."

"You don't even know what he is!"

"I know enough. Now move."

"No."

"Sarah," he warned, his eyes narrowing on her, I could see his fingers clenching on the axe and a sudden worry shot through me. What if he attacked her?

Anger flooded me at the thought of someone harming her so I leapt over her smaller body and crushed the burly man beneath me. Pinning him. My teeth ground together as I glared at the man, feeling gas well up in the back of my throat as I prepared to attack.

The gas was knocked out of me before I could add any sort of spark by a strong body crashing onto my side throwing my legs off balance.

The first strike wasn't enough to send me flying but it shocked me enough to give the man a chance to attack me with his axe, the flat end throwing me far.

Another hit to my side sent me wobbling, the increase in weight made my reaction time slower. I could feel my body begin to slip over to my side, I'd been inactive too long for this. It only took one more hit before I was on my side and the people on me scattered to find something to presumably tie me down.

Kicking and flailing madly I threw some of them off, the crash from where they landed sounding painful but none of my concern. I drew more gas into my mouth, preparing to shoot at them and take my human's when a large body landed on my head shutting my mouth and letting gas seep slowly from between my teeth.

It was painful but not massively so, his hands grasping my face though was beginning to ache, he was pressing heavily against my mouth holding it shut, and the fact that I could feel a spiked weapon there wasn't helping.

"Hold it Gobber. Goddammit get those two out of here!"

I took notice of what was behind me, I could hear struggling. Sarah and Arden struggling to be precise. I had almost forgotten that they were still behind me. I felt certain that they would have left by now. Knowing they were still there I began to thrash more, feeling more people jump onto me and weigh me down. They were heavy, their muscular bodies weighing the same as a baby Gronckle.

"Toothless!" It was Arden, I could hear the distress in his voice and felt some of the people stiffen as they obviously realised who he was shouting to. They didn't voice it though, but I was sure a few looks were being passed around. He didn't say anything else, and if I concentrated hard enough I could smell their scent moving away. Were they leaving or being taken away?

"Wait! You don't understand. He's not dangerous! He's not!" She cried out adamantly, her voice was touching on pleading and I could only guess she knew what was about to happen.

Before I could even think a large collar was slammed around my neck, the material as thick wide as my humans were. I shook my head madly but I couldn't shake it off. My mouth was held down and the humans piled on more, leaving me to fall to the ground helpless, frustration building in me. I couldn't sense them near anymore and the weight of them was making it hard to concentrate. With an angered cry I fell silent, giving up.

****Please read review****

54. Chapter 54

Arden's POV

We're thrown over one of the villager's shoulders, I didn't get the chance to see who, and carried out into the chaos that was the rest of the village. Other dragons flying overhead and stealing livestock. It was true chaos and Toothless was caught up in it. I wanted to scream I was so frustrated.

We were held back as he was tied up and taken away. My eyes stung from anger but I held it back knowing Sarah would be in a far worse

state than me. We couldn't see him anymore, the panic in the village and the other dragons swarming children and sheep carrying them off causing just as much uproar as Toothless did.

It was mayhem and the hunters were in their element, tracking down dragons and taking them down. Thankfully it didn't look like they were killing them. Just capturing them.

"Will you two stop! You could've died!"

"No! He was protecting us!"

"He's a beast! Evil, dangerous!"

"You don't know him." I stamped on our capturer's foot before grabbing Sarah's hand and pulling her in the direction of where Toothless was taken. But the impenetrable force of bodies running away made it impossible, every time we threw ourselves at them they managed to hold us back, some even wrapping their arms around us to carry us with them.

"Stay back kids! It's dangerous. The beast from the woods has entered the village." They would all cry, not being able to see the dragons in the sky due to the rain and believing the lies the hunters spewed to keep them back.

I glanced across at Sarah and was shocked to see tears in her eyes. I hadn't noticed it before, the rain soaking out skin, but they were definitely tears, the skin around her eyes turning puffy and her lip quivering despite it being fairly warm.

Taking her hand I led her away from the people, justifying that Toothless would be fine for a little while longer.

I found shelter under a porch, the small roof letting rain run over like a glass door. Releasing her hand I forced her to look me in the eye, my brows furrowing in concern as I saw more water slip from her lids.

"What's wrong?" I asked, my voice shaking from worry. I wasn't used to this. She's always seemed so strong.

"I-I...I just feel so bloody helpless." She admitted, her voice wobbling as she rubbed at her eyes with the heel of her hand. "Toothless, he, he was depending on us, and not look where he is. In the hunter's hands. We promised him and we failed."

"No we didn't. We'll get him back. He'll be fine." I tried to reassure her but if anything it just made more tears come. I wiped the tears from her eyes as gently as I could, letting her vent out her frustrations.

"We'll never be able to get through all them and the dragons. We're completely helpless. As soon as we get near to Toothless he'll be whisked away or killed."

"What do you want to do then?"

"I don't know. I just don't know what to do. I've failed him. I know it."

"Will you calm down, what's come over you? This isn't the you I know. We'll get him back before anything happens. I promise."

"How? With the dragons attacking the people running in panic and my dad. How, How will we do it?"

"I don't know, but we will." I took a moment to think, running a hand through my hair in exasperation. "Look, go back home. I'll think of something. Honestly." She looked like she wanted to argue but I left before she could, heading towards where Toothless was taken.

The rain was beginning to let up as I ran, and as it did the dragons started to slow down, the ones who managed to steal food didn't come back for more, instead carrying it back to the nest. As they left the confusion started to die down and I was able to get close to Toothless who was being tranquilised by the hunters.

Anger flooded me as I watched them cover his large body in a tarp and carry him off, he didn't look like a dragon when covered, more like an oversized human. I followed after them silently, cursing myself for letting this happen. How could I have been so stupid to let that dragon attack Sarah and get to the point where Toothless had to intervene.

I was battling against the crowd the further after them I went, it seemed as if they were all gathering somewhere, probably trying to figure out what had happened. As some of them passed they would pat the hunter's shoulders, congratulating them for catching something even if they didn't know what it was.

I hid around the side of a house, staring at them as they loaded Toothless into the back of a van, closing the door and turning to talk to someone just out of my line of sight. I watched as they locked the van and felt dead fall into my stomach. How was I supposed to get him back now? Making a mental note of where he was I left to go home, it was too late to see Sarah and I was sure I'd be grounded to the nth degree.

In the morning I lay in bed listening to everyone milling about outside. It seemed they'd completely forgotten last night and were acting as if the scorch marks in the ground were an everyday occurrence. They probably were thinking about it but I had always put it down to falling torches.

Leaving my warm nest I stood at the window staring down. It looked like nothing had ever happened, the ground where it was burned or turned up by the dragons had been covered over with barriers placed around them, and the houses burned in the crossfire were being patched up. It was as if this was just a normal day on Berk.

My eyes pulled themselves over to Sarah's house, and I could feel a pang of worry in my stomach for her. She hadn't taken Toothless' capture well, to top it off I didn't know where he was exactly.

As though waiting for the thought to pop into my head a truck drove past the house, it was one of the ones the hunter's used to transport their materials around. It was heaving down to the dock, the back looking heavily weighted down. Anything could have been in the back of the truck but an instinct told me it was Toothless. Grabbing a pen

and paper from my school bag I wrote down the licence plate and ran to get ready. With all the commotion of last night and the destruction outside she'd relented the grounding if only until everything settled down again.

I headed outside with a slice of toast that had been laid out on the table for me when I got downstairs. It was nice to eat something non-fish related but I had no time to savour it as I ran to her house, still buttoning up the front of my shirt as I went.

I couldn't see any lights on but I was sure she was awake. Her curtains were closed and there wasn't a car on the front.

I ran up the hill, only stumbling a few times on the steps that led to the grand front door. Knocking twice I let myself in, hoping she wouldn't mind too much. I had half expected the door to be locked but it opened easily.

Once inside I could see a plate of food had been left on the table with a note beside it, presumably from her dad. Ignoring the note I looked around the ground floor, the curtains were firmly closed and the TV off. Ever since her dad left there'd been no movement in the house.

I went upstairs quietly, if she was still asleep I didn't want to risk waking her up. The upstairs was just as quiet as downstairs. It was as if the whole house had been frozen.

I couldn't remember which room was hers and after opening the wrong door twice I came across her, a lump still in bed.

Approaching I stood over her bed staring down at the back of her head. I couldn't tell if she were asleep but I presumed so. I stood in silence for a few moments, waiting to think of something to say or do while she slept.

"What do you want?" The sound of her voice shocked me from my thoughts and pulled a small cry from my lips. She turned to face me, a small glimmer of a smirk on her lips quickly fading, so fast I wasn't sure if it had actually been there in the first place.

"Wanna go get Toothless?"

"He's gone, my dad won't talk to me and the hunters have won." She stated matter-of-factly. Dark circles were present under her eyes and her skin looked ever pastier than usual.

Reaching out I grabbed her hand and forced her to sit up straight. Mumbling an apology I slapped her round the face, watching as her had whipped with my hands and a bright pink mark bloomed on her cheeks.

"What was that for?!"

"For you to snap out of it. Get dressed." I ordered, flicking the lights on in the room and stepping out to give her some privacy. I felt slightly bad, the sting in my hand was pretty bad I could only imagine how much her face must hurt. I'd apologise once she came out, I decided stepping to the side of the door so she could exit once she'd finished.

She immersed a few minutes later, her face still slightly red, hair brushed and dressed in some baggy clothes.

"Sarah, I'm sor-"

"Don't, I kind of needed that." She cut me off, placing a hand on my shoulder and giving a small squeeze and a smile.

"Still, it was pretty harsh."

"It worked didn't it. Tell me what happened? Something must have for you to be so insistent on me getting up."

"I think I saw the truck Toothless was in. I wrote down the license." I handed her the slip with the numbers and letters scribbled down on them and watch as her face slowly broke out into a wide grin which she tried to contain.

"I didn't fail him?"

"Not yet at least. Come on, we've got to get moving if we want to make sure our dragon stays with us."

I take her hand and run downstairs, the sound of our heavy footsteps banging against the wood ringing through the house.

We leave straight away and barely remember to lock the door behind us.

There's a way in which she holds my hand that makes my heart jump, and I have to force myself to remember what we're doing and not blush like a school girl.

I lead her in the direction the truck was going earlier. Hoping I was right about it going to the dock and it wasn't going to swerve round and go somewhere completely different.

I could feel nervousness well up in me, I wasn't sure what we were planning on doing when we found him or what they were going to be doing. I wasn't even sure why they chose Toothless and not the other dragons that were flying around. I'm sure they'd killed others before him. So why chose him and not one of the smaller easier to handle ones?

I couldn't think too much on my query, Sarah's hand tugging me away and back to reality. I look around briefly to see what she wants and see she's trying to pull me behind a bush. My mind flies with theories as to what she could be up to and just as my hopes begin to raise a truck similar to the one earlier passes us.

I almost laugh at how wrong my mind was and the fact that it instantly went there. As soon as the truck passes round a corner and away from us we slipped out from behind the bush and carried on towards the docks.

I could see a large ship being loaded, it wasn't one of our cargo ships though, it looked menacing, as though Vikings sailed them. Shields were strapped to the sides and the sail wasn't one of Berk's crest, it was painted with a crudely drawn dragon with swords

piercing through it. If History class served that was the old crest that was changed in the late 18,000.

But, I thought they'd destroyed all the ships and whatnots holding the old crest? I glanced to Sarah and she seemed to be having the same thought, sketching down the crest in her notebook. She caught me staring and I raised a brow in silent question.

"You really think I go anywhere without this?"

Looking back to the truck I can see them begin to unload, the area surrounding the dock completely shut off from the rest of the village by signs and constant truck movement.

Seven men could be seen emerging from the truck, three on either side of a large tarp covered object and one up front guiding them.

From this distance I couldn't see if the object was alive but a strong feeling in my gut was screaming at me that this was Toothless. Recklessly I ran from out hiding place towards the ship, stopping behind another truck that was being used as a barricade.

I could hear Sarah's footsteps following me just a few steps behind and I made sure to wait for her to stop beside me before I said anything.

"Toothless' over there I'm sure of it."

"I don't understand this, what are they hoping to achieve? Why are they loading him on a ship? Why not just kill him like the other dragons?" I couldn't answer that, I wondered myself what they were going to achieve. If the book of dragons we read back when we first found Toothless was anything to go by these dragons were considered the most dangerous and deadly. It specifically said to avoid them no matter what.

"I don't know. Come on, let's get closer."

Slowly we crept forwards, keeping an eye out for any hunters or stay villagers, but everyone seemed to be minding their own business. We made it to the truck Toothless was taken out of just in time to see them secure it to the Viking ship and rip the cover off of him, revealing his shiny black scales to the world, his wings anchored down by bent metal poles and his head held shut by a thick leather strap.

It was a horrible sight and I couldn't bring myself to look for more than a few seconds before the pain in my chest got to the intensity of a stab wound.

"Toothless, what have they done to you?" Sarah whispered, absentmindedly scratching her pencil over her notebook, destroying the sketch she had been working on.

From behind a truck a man stepped out, his hulking build making him typical of the men of the island, and his bushy ginger beard and hair identifying him immediately. Stoick. He spoke with the hunters, his eyes landing on Toothless, and though he was turned mostly away from us I could see little to no surprise in him. He looked as if he'd just seen a cat or dog, not a mythical creature.

He ordered something I couldn't hear before climbing onto the ship, sneering down at Toothless before the ship took off.

"What are you going to-?" I started to ask, turning to where Sarah was beside me only to see air. Looking around panicked I saw her making a run for the ship, jumping onto the back just before it became unreachable and holding onto the wood with all the strength in her slim body. I watched in amazement as she scrambled through a port hole and disappeared inside, the only evidence that she'd been there being the now open window which she soon shut.

****please read review****

55. Chapter 55

Hiccup's POV

I'd landed in a storage room, stack after stack of boxes towered above me. I wasn't sure what had caused me to act so recklessly, and now that the adrenaline is gone I was beginning to think I was stupider and stupider as the seconds pass.

I was stood behind a box stack larger than me and easily hiding me from anyone else in here. I wasn't sure if I was alone, I wasn't sure how I was supposed to be getting to Toothless, all I knew was that I had to find him before the hunters were able to do what they have planned for him.

Peeking around the edge of the box I couldn't see anyone and carefully I moved out into the open.

It was dark down here, the only light coming in from the small window. There were no electrical wires down here, either the ship didn't think it important enough to put some in the storage room or the entire ship was using candle light.

I took a few moments to look around, checking out the storage room and if there were any other doors out.

The only exit I could see was perched atop a set of stairs, only about three steps, but the door had a large lock, if it was locked I'd jumped aboard pointlessly.

Heading over to the door I pressed my ear against it listening for footsteps of any kind, I couldn't hear any but I waited a moment before trying the door.

It opened easily, creaking very quietly before swinging open. Looking up and down the hall I couldn't see anyone and using sneaking skills I didn't know my clumsy body had I managed to make it into another empty room.

I wasn't sure what I was supposed to do, I'd run onto here in a panic and now all I knew was that I had to avoid people and get Toothless back. I silently cursed myself, knowing I should have stayed with Arden and not jumped aboard, had I done that I could actually form a plan and not wing it.

It was too late for that now and I carried on what I'd started, peaking out through the door I was hiding behind and running to the next nearest one.

I made it to just below the upper deck, footsteps overhead sending nervous shivers down my spine. I wasn't sure if they'd be able to hear me, but every time they neared I held my breath and prayed to Thor for them to leave. I almost squealed when someone stood on the grate near me and almost fell through. I probably did scream to some extent but the man's startled cry covered me.

Thankfully, he didn't fall through and just yanked the grate back into place, not bothering to check why it might have fallen.

"Hey boys, watch out for this. 'S broken!" He bellowed, his voice sounding familiar. He was obviously a villager. But who exactly I couldn't tell from just a foot and a single bellow.

"This ol' pile a junk, shoulda checked be'er before we got on." A second called, his voice not nearly as familiar but holding the same kind of Berk drawl that many of the villagers had in their speech. "Stay 'way from it. I'll get som'one to come look at it."

His footsteps carried him away from me, avoiding the grate this time and walking with more care around the unstable edge.

I tried to peer through the grate, to see if I could catch any familiar faces or maybe see Toothless, but all that was visible was the sky, clouds hanging low overhead looking like they could burst any second.

Looking down at my meagre clothing I knew I wouldn't be able to brace a storm, heading towards the stairs that lead back down to the ground floor I wondered if perhaps they had him locked away in a room. If I searched them all I was bound to find something.

Arden's POV

I ran back to the village as soon as Sarah scrambled through the port hole, my chest heaving as I stood in the centre people staring at me as though I was a lunatic. Ignoring them I looked for the other teens of Berk, my eyes landing on the twins, Ruff and Tuff, the two of them in one of their usual scraps.

I hadn't spoken to them since the incident in the woods and I wondered how they'd react. They seemed pretty traumatised. Not that I could blame them.

Shifting over to them slowly, as though I were approaching a wild animal I stood, watching them fight for a few moments. It was always entertaining to watch their fights, one moment they'd be punching the other in the face the next they'd be complaining about how bored they were and finally they'd be insulting the other using different healthy foods. Honestly, I was more amazed that they knew that many existed.

Coughing meekly their attention was drawn to me, their brows furrowing after rising high in surprise.

"What do you want?" Ruff asked, her voice harsh and a scowl firmly on

her face. Tuff looked more awkward, as though he was trying to avoid my gaze, as if that would somehow stop me knowing it was him.

"Listen, I need your help." They looked mildly surprised, their faces contorting into ones of confusion and disbelief.

"I don't know, what we gotta do?" His voice shocked me, he didn't sound anything like the cocky arrogant Tuff I knew, he sounded almost shy.

"I need Snotlout and Fishlegs, then I'll explain."

"'K, I'll go get them." He took off before I could say anything, running to find them though not looking particularly enthusiastic about it.

"Should we meet back here when we find them?"

"I gotta talk to you." The change in her voice was noticeable too, she sounded almost concerned. For who, I wasn't sure. I nodded unsurely, worriedly, brows knitting themselves together. "Listen, he didn't mean to. He's an idiot. He was trying to do good."

"What did he do?"

"He was just curious, he knew he messed up straight away."

"Ruffnut, what did he do? Tell me? It can't have been that bad. Did he break something?"

"No, not break something. He found something, and he was bitter. And well, y'know what he's like when he's angry. He doesn't think things through, he acts on impulse and I know he regrets it."

"Ruff, tell me."

"We found a gun. Out in the forest. And, well, they're not allowed here, so we returned it. But he couldn't keep his mouth shut and blabbed to people about what happened. Between us and you two." I could feel my blood running cold, what she was hinting at feeling more like a slap in the face. In fact, I couldn't help raising my hand to rub at my cheek, feeling it tingle despite the fact no one had touched it. "He feels so bad Arden, really. We want to help however we can. If it's 'cause of what we did, we want to help."

"It is, most likely at least. They took Toothless, our dragon."

"Your dragon?"

"Yes, our, we found him and we're caring for him. And they took him away. Didn't you see the commotion the other day? When he protected us from the raid." I could hear footsteps coming back towards us, probably Tuff with the others. I glanced up and in the direction of the noise, seeing Tuffnut coming towards us looking sheepish and unsure. Though the cause of that now was clear.

I couldn't keep the scowl from my face, feeling anger rise in my chest at seeing him after what he'd done, unintentionally or not. But

I swallowed it down, reminding myself that they were my only option. I forced a small weak smile on my face, deciding to prepare myself to try and explain the situation to people who had been on the outside the entire time or had only seen snippets of the bad times.

"Arden, baby, where have you been?" In my distraction I didn't see Sally coming towards me, nor did I manage to stop her from wrapping her arms around me in a crushing hug. She was just slightly shorter than me but a lot beefier, there was no way I was getting out of this. Reluctantly I had to stay in her arms, feeling her pull me closer until I was tight against her, almost moulding into her body.

"Hey Sally, how are you?"

"Much better now my Arden is back." She kissed me cheek sloppily and I unintentionally pulled a face of disgust feeling her spit there.

"That's great, now, if you could let me go and let me explain what I need you all for that'd be great." She completely ignored me, hugging me tighter if anything and shaking her head, having no intention to move so much as a muscle.

Giving up I began speaking anyway. Explaining as much as I could while keeping it vague enough that I didn't lose them along the way.

They all seemed captivated by the story, Ruff and Tuff adding some details in that they knew of the dragons to try and make it more believable to the others. I could see the scepticism on their faces, but slowly Sally dropped her arms and stepped back, seeming to sense that it was quite a serious matter. Fishleg's mouth hung open for the majority of the tale, only closing when he thought to question something or shush us when people were walking too close and could overhear what was obviously a private conversation.

"We all caught up?" I asked, finishing the tale with Sarah jumping aboard the ship and me gathering them.

"Yeah, so what do you want us to do?"

"It's not like we're much good at this kind of stuff, I can barely get my cat to come in at night. How am I supposed to help?" Reaching into his pocket he pulled out some sweets and stuffed them into his mouth chewing them quickly wiping at his forehead worriedly.

"I just need anything you can do. Look, I know you're not her biggest fan, but she did nothing wrong and I'm holding you two idiots accountable for this." I pointed my finger accusingly at the twins, watching as Tuff's face paled, he was obviously feeling guilty, meaning he'd be on my side for sure.

"Yeah okay," He answered instantly, an indignant squeak from Sally telling me she wasn't nearly as pleased with the idea.

"What? Are you kidding me? No way would I help that loser, they're probably just doing this to get your attention Arden sweetie. Forget about her and come back to me. I'm willing to give you a second chance."

I'd never wanted to hit her more in my life, anger swelling in me and before I could subdue it I snapped.

"Do you really think that? You're so jealous Sally, just because I don't return these feelings of yours doesn't mean every girl that catches my eye is some bimbo. This is a bit more serious than a childish feud between kids, who knows what could happen to either of them."

She stared at me stunned for a few seconds before wiping at her eyes and glaring at the ground. I would have said more but a roar overhead that sounded almost exactly like thunder caught my attention. Flicking my eyes up a thought popped into my head. Crazy as it was it was the only thing I could think of.

"Everyone, I have an idea."

****please read review****

56. Chapter 56

We must have stolen at least sixty pounds worth of fish from the shops, Ruff and Tuff adept at taking what wasn't theirs and easily making the few trips for us.

I didn't know how long I had but I separated the fish out into equal masses and sent them off to the edge of the village to try and persuade a dragon to come down. The thunderous crash from earlier was a dragon hiding above the clouds, its large round body giving away its hiding place as it blocked out the sun.

I wasn't sure where it was now but if one was still hanging about others had to be too. Even if it was just two or three of them that'd be more than enough to get us across.

"Where are we going?" Tuff asked, the sack of fish on his back and weighting him down noticeably.

"Go to the edges of the village, near the forest mainly. Anywhere where there aren't people basically." They nodded before heading out, much more unsure than they let their body language show. I took what was left of the fish and went off myself, dodging people in the streets and trying to look as casual as was possible with dead fish strapped to my back.

I made it into the woods and towards a tiny clearing, it was part of a formerly attempted exploration into the woods that was scrapped days after starting it. I don't know why I chose this part, there were much easier places to try and trap a dragon, but it almost called to me. As cheesy as that sounds even to me.

I piled the fish as neatly as I could before sitting back in the tree line and waiting.

I thought it was going to take ages, that I'd be waiting hours and have to relent to riding on the back of one of the others dragons. But, not even five minutes later a dragon landed before me, its body slim and malnourished. It was light blue with spines along its tail

and head. I watched as it nibbled at the fish before swallowing all of them in just a few seconds.

Cautiously I edged out from the tree line towards the dragon, watching as it jumped back and eyed me nervously. Holding my hands up to try and show I meant no harm I threw my mind back to when we first got Toothless and how we approached him. I doubted it would go exactly like that, at least I hope it didn't, so I grabbed a fish chunk that had fallen from their mouth during their rapid eating and threw it at their feet, waiting for them to react.

They eyed it wearily, hesitating to eat it as if I'd potentially poisoned it, not that that would have been possible with their eyes on me all the time. Finally it seemed to decide its hesitation was stupid and grabbed the chunk of leftover food and swallowed it down, licking their lips happily and chirping softly.

I used the momentary distraction to shrink the distance between us, getting as close as I could before they began to look anxious and stopping with my hands raised 'til it calmed.

"I'm not going to hurt you. Promise." I assured quietly, a small roll of their eyes making me chuckle. At least intelligence wasn't limited to Toothless. That'd make this a lot easier. "I guess I couldn't even if I wanted to huh?" They nodded, a slightly snarky laugh like exhale leaving them.

Cautiously I reached out to them, watching as they refused to shy away unlike before despite their body language telling me they wanted to. My hand landed on their head, rough scales nipping at my skin slightly before I managed to find a comfortable spot and let them lean into me.

From this close up I could see they were a girl and she was definitely a young one too, looking quite small to how the book had scaled her and much leaner. If I remember correctly she's a Nadder.

"Hey there girl, my name's Arden." She met my eyes, nodding softly and seemingly curious as to what I was doing. It probably wasn't too often humans interacted with her in a nonviolent way. "So, I need your help," No sooner had I gotten the words out had she pulled away and started to walk into the forest, her head held high and purposely angled towards the sun.

Following afterwards I was calling out to her, trying to find something to snag a sympathetic nerve.

"They're going to attack your home too!" I added after already trying to use Sarah and Toothless to goad her. Thankfully that seemed to get her attention, she froze looking over her shoulder at me with a raised eyebrow, looking sceptical but willing to hear me out. "They're off to attack there, don't underestimate them. They're very strong." She came closer, her head nearly pressed to my chest forcing me to stumble back as she looked up, searching my eyes for something.

Whatever it was she seemed to find it. Nodding her head softly and bumping me with her head as she started to walk out of the forest.

"So you'll help?" She seemed to shrug, the action barely noticeable but I guessed it was the best I was going to get.

Not wasting any time and worried she'd change her mind I ran out ahead and guided her through the forest and around the border to where we were going to meet the others. Fishlegs had already come back, he stood by a tree talking to the leaves. Unable to quell my curiosity I instructed for her to stay before making my way over.

"How was the hunt?" I asked, keeping in vague in case anyone was in hearing range.

"Uh, well, it was good. Not exactly speedy I guess but y'know, good." I nodded, trying to look around him and see if he'd had the same idea as me of hiding them behind the shrubbery. Behind him and a few thick trees was a large fat dragon, the head making up most of what I was able to see. It had a large under-bite with teeth jutting out from the stuck out bottom lip. Great lumps and bumps covered their body and I was sure I could see what could only be described as a mace as a tail.

"I'm guessing you found them and they didn't just follow and are trying to launch a sneak attack."

"Yeah, I fed them and they followed me. We're fast friends. I was back before you were all out of sight." I could see the pride in him, his chest swelling as he puffed it out as much as was humanly possible.

"That's two down, even if the twins and Sally fail we'll still be able to go after the ship."

"I doubt Tuff and Ruff would be able to let a dragon outsmart them. Not a feat but they're stubborn." I laughed softly, smiling to myself, I was about to excuse myself to get my dragon but a rustling behind me grabbed my attention and I span round to see her stood behind me, barely in the tree line her head tilted to the side in confusion as she looked between Fishlegs and the other dragon.

"That who you found? A Nadder? They're beautiful." A grunt from the Gronckle seemed to startle him and he quickly added, "Of course no one is prettier than you though Meatlug."

"Meatlug?" I asked, raising a brow as I watched him shift nervously, suddenly very embarrassed about the name he'd given it.

"Well, I had to call her something and I figured y'know." He kicked at the ground as he spoke, all confidence leaving him. As though he were suddenly aware of something. I wasn't sure what it was nor did I particularly care to find out, I was far too stressed worrying about Sarah and trying to force the others to hurry up with my mind. Of course I was having little success with the latter.

oooo

It was a miracle. Plain and simple. A miracle that they all managed to find dragons and they all managed to make it back before I took off on my own from worry. Sally had sound a thin dragon with long

overgrown talons, their head bigger than the majority of its body and probably too heavy to carry on such a thin neck. The twins had found the perfect dragon for them, somehow managing to snag one with two heads and though they were still fighting it seemed they'd decided on which head they wanted.

"We're all here. Good. I only have a basic understanding of flying but that's still more than you lot so we're gonna need rope and bladders of steel."

A hesitant look crossed them and I couldn't blame them in the slightest. What I was proposing didn't exactly sound safe nor did my voice sound reassuring in the slightest. If I were them I wouldn't listen to me in the slightest. But it seemed I'd done a good job of convincing them prior and they went off quickly, coming back moments later with ropes taken from one of the stalls. I doubted it was a very sturdy stall anymore but that wasn't my concern at the moment.

Taking a strip of rope from the nearest one to me I called my dragon from the woods to tie it around her, watching as she glared at anything and everything, namely the twin's dragon who seemed more interested in fighting with itself than helping.

It was definitely the right dragon for them but not for what they were needed for right now. To my surprise Sally's dragon smacked the two 'round the head with his long neck, the two heads knocking together before it sulk down, not really hurt just pouting slightly at the reprimand.

"Arden, did you see that, you and Hookfang are getting along greatly, surely this means something." I wanted to question the name but it seemed they'd all begun to think of them. Perhaps I'd have to think of one for my Nadder. But that wasn't nearly important at the moment.

"Look, we're running out of time. Everyone, get on your dragons and follow my lead. Who knows how long we've got."

They seemed to all jump at once, eyes widening to look like saucers and mouths hanging open.

"What? Oh come on guys, what did you think I was doing when I told you to get some rope." They looked between themselves and shrugged, apparently they weren't exactly thinking about anything. Were they just expecting me to know what to do? I don't think they realise just how heavily I relied on Sarah.

With a deep breath I started to explain slowly what the rope was for, their faces all slowly paling as I did so.

Once I'd finished we had considerably less time but at least now we were all working much faster, having the rope secured and very shaky riders climbing on too.

Despite being more confident than all of them put together my fear of flying was still there and was trying to creep up on me as I pulled myself up and onto my dragons back. A name for her still trying to be worked out in my mind.

"Alright, everyone, are we ready?" I asked, earning a somewhat enthusiastic reply, the most notable being the twins. It wasn't exactly the response I'd hoped for but I guessed it was the best I was going to get. Resigning myself to the fact I settled myself properly on my Nadder, gripping onto the rope around her neck tightly and giving them a basic run down on how to fly them while getting her off the ground too.

Surprisingly it was much more successful than I'd imagined, all of them picking it up fairly quickly with only a few minor slips and falls. We were taking off properly moments later, me taking the lead and guiding them up into the clouds as we flew across to where the ship had left at and hoping it was still in view.

****please read review****

57. Chapter 57

I could hear them less than gracefully behind me, but if I was honest with myself they were doing much better than I had been, they were all clinging for dear life and following well.

I lead the pack, my dragon, thankfully, much calmer than theirs and flying softly albeit a bit too fast for my liking. But now wasn't the time to be fussy. I was scanning the horizon for the ship, though it wasn't anywhere near my line of sight. Half an hour at least must have passed since they left, they'd be well on their way to wherever they were going. The ship may have looked old but I was sure it had been modified and modernised. It wouldn't be a snail that's for sure.

oooo

Hiccup's POV

I'd had to run and hide numerous times, my hiding spots compromised by heavy footed men breaking through weak spots and giving view of me. Had they not been so concerned with masking their error secretively they'd have noticed me hiding beneath their hands.

I had to admit, it was pretty thrilling, how close to being caught I was. Knowing at any second I could be caught. Who knows, I might turn into an adrenaline junkie.

My new hiding spot was at the other end of the ship, hidden in a sleeping chamber with an open window, water splashing up every now and again and wetting their bedding. I hadn't seen head or tail or Toothless and was beginning to doubt he was even on the ship. I'd checked the entire lower deck and what I could see from peepholes of the top and he was nowhere to be found.

Just as I thought that I could hear a groaning above me. But not a human one, and it sounded slightly familiar. Climbing onto the desk at the corner of the room, not caring about the paperwork or pens I was treading on I pressed my head against the ceiling, listening for the sound again. Hoping that the closer range would make it more noticeable.

It did, I could hear footsteps too, slow meaningful steps pacing in a

largish oval around something.

"To think, you exist. In my time, in my village. You exist. Around my daughter!" I winced away as soon as I recognised the voice, it was my dad, and clearly he was talking to Toothless. And from the sound of it he wasn't too understanding about it. I pressed my head back against the floor. Unable to hear as well now as his footsteps had taken him away from Toothless. My heart raced as my mind came up with all sorts of horrible theories as to what he could be doing, but I forced myself to be reasonable.

It was highly unlikely he was going to hurt him, if they'd dragged him out here they were planning something. I just hoped what they were planning wasn't anything deadly.

I heard a door close in the room then silence, no footsteps, no floor creeks, no doors. Biting my lip I jumped from the table and moved to the door in my hide out, peaking out and looking for anything before shuffling out. There was no one there and thankfully the stairs weren't too far from my room. I crept up them slowly, pushing up the hatch covering them and peeking out. Looking around the upper deck and gasping when I saw Toothless. Bound and chained to the deck, his head free to move mostly.

It looked like he was guiding them. His head shifting in one direction then the next and with each move the boat would move too. People stood far from him while still circling him almost completely. Giving him a wide birth while not allowing for any movement he made to go unnoticed.

"Captain, I think I can see something ahead of us. Through the fog." It was only after he mentioned it that I took notice of what was around us. The air was thick and grey, not allowing for any sight past the boat's bow. But, even with my limited field of view, I could see something red and glowing not too far off. It looked like fire, but that couldn't be possible, not in the middle of the sea.

"Land's coming up, be ready to turn or dock. Let's see what he does." I watched him as closely as everyone else, watching as his ears pressed flat against his head and his tail swished heavily. But his head didn't turn, and the boat docked.

I had to close the hatch and run back to my hiding space before it fully came to a standstill, slipping under the bed just to be safe as heavy footsteps passed overhead, the boat shifting as people jumped from the deck.

I didn't leave until it was silent, the upper-deck not making a single creek. I inched out from the bed, going over to the window and glancing out, staring at all the dozens of men. I didn't think even close to that many were on the ship. It was practically overflowing with people.

Moving from the window I made my way to the door, leaving slowly, part of me really not wanting to have to come up with a plan on how to save him. But I knew I couldn't possibly leave him. Both for the fact that I'd come so far and also because how was I supposed to live with myself knowing I'd abandoned a friend.

I practically crawled out despite the fact I was quite sure I was

completely alone on the ship now. Well, except for Toothless, I glanced to the ceiling as the thought hit me for the hundredth time. I'd have to save him. There was no way I could do that on my own.

I cursed myself, why did I have to be such a hot head sometimes. I should have stayed behind with Arden, we could have figured something out together. Maybe then we could stop whatever they were planning before they'd even docked.

I crawled up the stairs and pushed up the hatch, looking out and seeing no one else there. Carefully I pushed it open completely, being sure not to let it crash and alert them. That was the last thing I needed right now.

Before I hopped out I checked behind me, seeing no one there much to my relief. From my new higher position I could see Toothless set up on a small raised platform, his body held small by large thick iron poles curled around him in large semi-circles. My heart dropped, eyes widening exponentially at the sight. It was horrible. To see someone so powerful bound and chained. I wanted to cry, but knew that wasn't something I could do right now. I had to be strong. I had to stand up and help him.

Crawling forwards I came to his side, placing a calming hand on his scales and watching as he jumped slightly, coming back to the real world. He looked at me through the side of his wide eyes, pupils in thin slits before bursting wide as he recognised me, his mouth trying to twitch into a smile but restricted due to the large leather restraint holding his closed.

"Hey Toothless, hey pal. How ya doin'?" I knew I was talking but I hadn't planned anything grand to say so settled on something lacklustre instead. Wincing as I realised just how lame I sounded. Pushing it from my head I moved to his front, grabbing onto the leather restraint and pulling with all the strength I had. Which admittedly wasn't a lot.

It took a lot of heaving and wiggling it but it finally came off, the leather strap far too small for his head. He yawned heavily though I doubted he was actually tired and was just working out the kinks in his face, shaking his head softly as he bared and retracted his teeth.

Once he'd stilled I turned my attention to something I'd been ignoring since seeing him. A large, wooden collar the thickness of myself around his neck. I hadn't wanted to acknowledge it, but seeing as it was pinning him to the ship I was forced to.

On the side of the large collar was a padlock, about the size of my fist with a key lock.

"I'm gonna go find the key." I whispered to him, leaving his side to search the ship offering a smile of encouragement before I went. I could feel his gaze follow me as I slunk away, guilt enveloping me as I knew this was all my fault.

General POV

Stoick stood before the hunters, hands on his hips making his already rectangular figure seem even wider. He paced back and forth briefly

as he thought, stroking at his long ginger beard slowly.

"This is the nest? Here? Where these dragons come from and where they tale our children and flock."

"Yes, if the dragon's to be trusted. They're inside this mountain, we just need to bust it open and the dragons will leave."

"Just the mountain."

"Yes, destroy their home and they'll move on to somewhere more peaceful. There's no way we could kill them all so settle for moving them along." He nodded, folding his arms over his chest and pursing his lips.

"We aren't killing any?"

"If we capture any we can kill them. Dragon scales are exceptionally tough, better than the strongest of diamonds. They would make exceptional armour."

"The Night Fury?"

"We've never tried their armour before. We had previously thought them a myth. We would like very much to skin them."

"Very well. He'll be of no use to me once the dragons are gone. And getting it and that boy away from my daughter will be for the best." A small pang in his chest told him that wasn't the case but he ignored it, pushing it from his mind and stubbornly instructing them all to fetch the cannons. He needed to do this before he lost his nerve.

He hadn't signed up for this when he was elected, he'd signed up for the peaceful village to practically run itself. And it had. This was the first real instance where he was more sure they'd fail than succeed.

"Fetch the catapults too. Load them first, the amount of cannonballs are finite. Use them carefully." The hunters nodded, as well as those from the village who'd come to help, Gobber being the only one not to run off and help the others. Instead he came up to Stoick and laid his hand on the man's large shoulder.

"Listen Stoick. I'm not goin' tell ya wha' to do or nothin' but are ye sure this is best?"

"What are you talkin' about Gobber. Of course this is for the best. I'm protecting my child and the entire village. Are you tryin' to tell me you want the village to keep being attacked by these vermin."

"That's not what I meant, and ye know it."

"I'm doing what I think is right Gobber. That's all I can do." The one armed and legged man shook his head, not saying anything more as he patted his shoulder once more before leaving to aid the hunters.

Stoick sighed deeply, he knew he wasn't doing what she would want.

But he was desperate. He couldn't stand the thought of losing her, and that dragon was the biggest risk possible. There was no way anything good could come from that thing. Drastic as it was this was the only way to keep her safe.

****please read review****

58. Chapter 58

Less than five miles away Arden and the others were flying over, he was at the front followed shakily by the twins who for once were looking less than cockily confident. Their two headed dragon happily swaying its head and sending their faces green but they daren't tell it to stop.

The other dragons seemed to be more under control, Sally's Nightmare being the second exception with its constant divergence and inability to stay upright.

Arden ignored her screeches, patting the Nadder and keeping her going straight, his eyes locked on the horizon trying to find the ship. Nothing was there, the horizon stretching out for miles and holding not so much as a single sailing boat.

Pushing himself up in as close to a stand as he dared he raised a hand, covering his eyes and glaring at the distance. Screaming in shock and fear as the dragon beneath him nosedived, dropping to the skin of the water before carrying on. Her body feeling much more purposeful than before.

The other dragons had followed suit if the cries of surprise from behind were anything to go by. The beasts having no consideration for them nor did it seem like they'd even realised they'd done anything. It was almost as if they were working on instinct and that instinct had overwritten everything.

Arden clung to her scales, hoping that she didn't make any sharp turns or he'd be in the water and he highly doubted she'd come back for him.

"Everyone! You're gonna need an iron grip!"

"I'm gonna be sick."

"Be sick in the water then. Just don't let go."

The dragons seemed to follow an invisible string, bending and weaving at the same exact points in the rock pillars without so much as catching a nail against them.

"You guys hanging on?"

"As well as we can be!" Tuff yelled back, glued to the dragon's neck, his eyes screwed shut. He didn't even know if his sister was there or not, and honestly, he had no intention of opening his eyes to find out. All bravado gone for the time being as he concentrated on not soiling his trousers.

"Keep calm guys, let the dragons do it all. I'm sure they know what

they're doing."

"They're trying to kill us."

"No, they're not. If they were doing that there are much quicker and easier ways than this." It was supposed to be reassuring but if anything it just made them freak out all the more, clutching desperately to anything they could and hiding their faces.

Groaning to himself as he looked over his shoulders at them he decided to stop talking, honestly, he was just making it worse.

oooo

Catapults were spanning the length of the stone beach, ropes and mesh nets being laid out as stones were gathered and thrown into them, creating the makeshift projectiles.

Stoick watched as they worked, scowling at the mountain as though it were at fault for the turmoil between him and Sarah. His fists curling tight as he resisted the urge to yell at them to hurry up.

Thankfully though it seemed they could sense his less than welcoming aura and pushed to pack the meshes with stones and load them onto the catapults.

"Load your weapon, aim. Fire!" Stoick bellowed, his voice trembling the very foundations they stood on.

The devices sprang into action, throwing the projectiles to the same invisible mark on the wall and shattering upon impact, shrapnel spraying around and bouncing back to them, pinging from their clothes and faces. He didn't wince as one particularly badly repelled one caught his cheek leaving a fain pool of blood behind quickly.

"Keep firing, get the cannons ready. And don't slouch, we're doing this too." To prove his point he unsheathed his sword, swinging it softly as he steeled himself.

Cannons were rolled up, the small cannon balls being packed in.

"You're all firing at once. Ready. Aim. Fire!" They crashed into the mountain, balls shattering on impact and the stone falling with it. Crumbling in and revealing a black tunnel leading into an even darker void.

"Bring me a torch!" Stoick marked forwards, his hand outstretched waiting for one of the men to bring him the flaming rag stick. Claspig it tightly he strode forwards, fingers tensing as he aimed and threw the torch through the hole, lighting the passage briefly and revealing a multitude of colours and different size bumps running the perimeter.

The torch landed with an almost silent clatter soon followed by an eruption of wings and indignant screeches as the dragons fled.

"Mother of Thor" Stoick whispered as the dragons shot out in an unending tunnel of wings and screeching. "Men! Weapons ready! We're not letting these bastards get away scot free."

With a cheer they ran forwards, swinging their swords violently in the air but missing everything that passed. Not even a Terror falling around them. But it didn't stop them, the men convinced their actions were doing something, even if it were just serving as a warning to those about to fly past them.

The last dragon flew out softly, it was an older Gronckle who looked slightly injured. He flew higher than the others upon leaving, missing their swords by a margin and flying off at what could only be described as a fast crawl.

"Stoick I think that was the last of them." Gobber spoke up after a moment, silence having fallen over them after the rather anti-climactic ending to a fight that hadn't really even started.

"Victory!" Stoick thrust his sword into the air in triumph the others following soon after with similar cheers. None cared to question how easy the fight had been, the dragons not even interested in looking at them as they flew away. But none of them cared either. The dragons were gone, that was the only part of the story that mattered. The rest was there for a good story. With a few minor adjustments.

Their cheering couldn't drown out a monstrous roar, the hunters stilling instantly and waiting, a moment of realisation crossing their faces.

"Get back!" Their leader bellowed, running to the ships as the ground started to shake, bits of loose rock tumbling down and shattering on impact with the ground. None ignored him, sprinting desperately towards the ships in a panicked frenzy.

A large head burst through the already crumbled rock face, shattering half of the mountain as it forced itself from the pit it had resided in for decades.

"Get on the ships! Get on! Now!"

The dragon slashed out, knocking the catapults and sending them tumbling onto the ships, shattering them and crushing the bows under the force.

"Get away from the ships. Get away from that thing."

"Thor above. What is it?"

"It's the queen bee, I didn't think it would be so big though. This has to be the oldest dragon I've laid eyes on."

"What are our chances against it?"

"In the negative millions."

The words hit the burly man hard as he ran with the others to the edge of the island feeling his heart thud in his ears as the weight of what he'd done began to settle on him.

He'd angered and released a beast that no one could stop or even faze.

0000

Sarah rummaged around in the captain's room trying to find anything to help her free Toothless. Preferably a key but at this point she wasn't exactly bothered. She'd pocketed a pen knife she'd found in the top drawer figuring that may somehow come in handy and was moving on to lying flat and trying to look under the desk itself.

Before she could steady herself kneeling down the ship rocked with a loud crash, waves being thrown up against the porthole and forcing it open, splashing her and everything in the immediate vicinity. She was thrown onto her face by the huge rock of the ship, groaning in pain at hitting her head against the hard wood.

Quickly pushing herself up to her feet she ran from the office in a panic. The sound had come from the front of the ship near where Toothless was stationed. Slamming the door open she was met with a sinking front end of the ship. Toothless' perch slowly sinking into the water with no way for him to stop himself. Sprinting forwards desperately she dived for him, not quite knowing what she'd achieve by doing so but clasping onto the metal keeping his wings in place anyway.

She latched on and pulled, though she didn't accomplish anything as the cage dropped pulling her with it into the water, with barely enough time to hold her breath.

Plunging into the water her ears were flooded, nose filled and eyes stung. After a few moments she managed to grab onto her nose but the amount of salt water currently in her nasal passage wasn't healthy.

They landed on the floor, sand kicking up and assaulting her as it tried to accomplish something by sticking to her arms.

Water rushed up her nose and into her lungs, it taking everything in her not to cough too much or breathe in while doing so, her chest already burned from lack of oxygen. It took ten long seconds of fighting her lungs to give up and release him, swimming to the surface quickly but not before assuring him she was coming back.

Bursting through the surface she was damn near sick as she coughed up the water, her chest heaving and eyes watering. It probably wasn't her brightest idea to grab onto a sinking dragon without any precaution but it was too late to curse herself.

Swallowing a big lungful of air she dove back down, swiping her hair from her eyes as she went. She didn't notice the huge dragon looking her way, its claws digging into the loose ground as it stretched out muscles that had remained dormant for decades.

Reaching Toothless she stroked his face softly, wanting to throw her arms around him in apology for making all this happen. She pushed it aside though, going round to the large collar and trying to find any way to open it. Quick.

****Sorry it's so short but I've had flu all week and have been bedridden unable to get to or use my laptop. please read review****

59. Chapter 59

The dragons had taken complete control of the flight and by the time they reached the volcano the dragon was already out and screeching. Stoick and the others cowering at the side-lines as they tried to think of some way to defeat the beast. It was a goliath and any attack they could think of wouldn't even phase it.

Arden was out front, sitting up straight on his dragon and feeling as it gave him back control, allowing him to swerve out of the dragon's path and send the others in after it.

He'd briefed them before they arrived on what they might be up against and made it abundantly clear that they had to listen to everything he said. Sally of course agreed easily and wholeheartedly, the twins argued tooth and nail. Insisting they should be leader as their dragon was obviously so much cooler. Just look at it, it had two heads.

Eventually though, with the promise of food they gave in, sulking slightly but already moving onto the next argument of what they were having.

"So we're all clear? Keep the thing distracted and I'll go find Toothless and Sarah."

"Got it!" They all agreed, heading off, Fishlegs swooping down low, having decided his best chance was with Stoick and the hunters.

"You see them Stormfly?" The dragon shook its head, dropping lower and scanning the broken ships and sea. "Keep looking, she'll be where Toothless is, and Toothless was on these ships. I just hope he isn't in the water now too."

Feeling her rider's worry seeping through him she chirped, trying to gain his attention and bring it back from the sorrowful path it had taken.

A hand pattered her head as he muttered. "She'll be fine. I know it. She's tough, I just wish I was there to help."

Guiding her down to the ground he jumped from her back, motioning for her to wait before wading into the water, towards the ships and pulling himself up onto the closest one. It was one of the smaller ones, the front completely caved in and water starting to fill the lower levels.

He made his way to the side of the boat, leaning over the partially broken wood and gazing into the sea below. The waves were calmer than he'd expected, the dirty clear water giving a view to its bottom. He couldn't see anything. But something told him they weren't on the ships anymore. Something happened and knowing Sarah she'd dived straight in afterwards without a second thought for her own safety.

He debated on whether or not to jump in, if Toothless was under there with her it was only fair. Then again the only proof he had that the dragon was under the waves was a strange sense in the pit of his stomach and the fact that the front of the ships were sinking towards the water.

"Ah screw it." He finally decided, jumping over the edge and diving straight under. Screwing his eyes closed on impact he inched them open, salt water hitting them and stinging but he had no time to find goggles. He'd have to grit and bear it as he forced them to open fully, barely able to see through the murk but just enough to swim under the boat and towards what looked like a black lump from this distance.

Drawing on every school swimming lesson he'd had he kicked out, trying to move as fast as he could but he was moving at a snail's pace. If that was Toothless in the nearing distance he'd run out of air before he reached him.

His eyes widened as he saw a body moving around the blackness and for a moment he worried it was a hunter, trying to finish the dragon off. But he doubted they were that desperate to get rid of Toothless, especially with the dragon up top.

Through the water he could hear the beast roaring, the dark murk being illuminated as the thing let out burst of fire.

'I hope that thing has a shot limit' Arden thought absentmindedly. It certainly didn't seem to be sparing with its fire though. Making it to what he'd thought was Toothless his eyes widened, seeing Sarah trying to pick the lock using a pocket knife. Kicking his legs he made it to her side, trying not to chuckle at her startled face.

Toothless was thrashing his head, trying to snap the wood keeping him pinned through sheer force, he didn't seem to be doing much good, the chain connected to the wood at his feet hardly even being pulled taut let alone to the point of breaking.

Air bubbles were releasing through his nose and Arden was sure he had to be running low.

He wasn't sure what he could do to help pick the lock, and looking around the seabed he tried to find anything that could be of help. Even if it were just a lost hairpin. There was nothing.

Pulling her away he pointed up to the surface, telling her to grab a breath while he thought. Not arguing she went. Leaving him there, trying to keep Toothless still so he didn't waste any more breath.

He held the pocket knife she'd left in the lock and turned it in his fingers, ignoring the burn of his lungs. Casting his eyes over the lock he saw the screws holding it in place. Eight of them, thick oversized but screws nonetheless.

A thought popped into his head and before he could convince himself it would never work he started. Sliding the knife sideways into the screws and turning, trying to loosen them as quickly as

possible.

Toothless had stilled, apparently realising that whatever was happening was an improvement and had a much better chance of working than head bangs.

The screw came undone quickly, any grip it had on the wood going as soon as it started to spin.

Sarah came back down, pushing him aside as soon as she saw the screw was loose and making him start on the next, undoing it with her hands and dropping it to the floor where it settled amongst the oysters.

They had barely managed to undo three when Toothless broke free, snagging them with his claws and shooting up through the water with them in tow. He dropped them before landing taking in the sight before him.

The mountain had caved in on one side revealing the spider web of tunnels within, the huge dragon standing on the shore shooting torrents of fire at the mini-swarm of dragons trying to keep it occupied.

Shaking his body free of water Toothless tore his eyes away and shifted them to his riders, watching them take huge gulps of breath as they knelt on the beach.

"Sarah!" A voice to the side grabbed their attention and they came to see Stoick running over, the man keeping one eye on the dragon and one on Toothless. While somehow still watching his daughter wheeze. "Sarah! What are you doing here?" He settled his hands on her shoulders tightening his grip and turning her to face him once she caught her breath.

He moved his eyes from her soaked face to Arden who was still coughing desperately. Catching his glare she swatted his hands away, standing she could see the shocked almost hurt expression on his face.

"Now really isn't the time for this dad. I get you love being the good ol' protective father but drop it right now. This really isn't the time." He stared at her shocked, she'd never spoken like that before, there was a hardness in her eyes that told him she was in no way backing down. And begrudgingly he did so. Nodding his head and standing he cleared his throat.

"I, I understand."

"Good. Arden, what are they all doing up there. What's the plan?"

"The plan was really distract it until I got you and Toothless back. Cos I highly doubt the other dragons would be able to take that thing. But Toothless, he's a Night Fury, he stands a shot." She nodded, wringing out her shirt as she watched the dragon's fight.

"Do you have another dragon with you or can I have you with me?"

"I brought a Nadder. Where is she?" As though on cue the blue Nadder dropped from the sky at his side. She nosed him and glanced over at Stoick her eyes narrowing in distaste at being so close to him. "Now isn't the time for that." He quickly chastised her, pulling himself up onto her back. "I have faith you'll know what to do once we're up there, we'll keep it distracted while you think. Once you make a shot I'm pulling them all back and we'll be there as backup if you need it."

"Okay, that sounds like a plan."

She pulled herself onto Toothless, strapping herself in and extending his tail.

"Alright Toothless, you ready? Let's do this." The dragon hunched down before springing up, his wings catching the air instantly and propelling them high into the sky, quickly straightening out.

Hunkering down on his back she stared at the dragon who seemed oblivious to them both. Sally was trapped on its head smacking its eyes with a stick that looked to have been plucked from a dead tree.

Just as she was about to swoop in and grab her the twins came from the sky, ragging on each other and sending their dragon into a spin towards her.

Sally backed up in horror before realising they had no idea she was there. Dropping the stick she steeled herself before making a running leap of faith.

"Oof!" The air was kicked from her lungs, winding her and leaving her gasping as she scrabbled for a hold on the slick scales of the two headed dragon.

"Sally?" Tuff asked

"We were just coming for you. We're here to rescue you."

"Yeah, well, you did a rubbish job of it. I think I broke a rib." Using all her strength she pulled herself up, climbing onto the back of Ruff's dragon head and clutching on as though her life depended on it.

The dragon seemed to finally snap into sense at feeling the pain in its eyes leave and locked eyes with the trio.

It sucked in a large gasp of breath, curdling the smoke at the back of its throat fizzes and crackles filling the air as sparks began to form.

"Toothless!" On command the dragon shot out a ball of blue fire. It crashed into the lower jaw of the beast, snapping their mouth shut and sending her backwards from the sheer force of the blow.

A roar of anger rang through the air, the dragon clawing at the earth, stretching its large tattered wings out crunching through the shattered side of the mountain.

"Everyone, get back and stay far away." She yelled, her voice carrying far, surprising everyone including herself. They complied though, the dragons falling back seeming to sense her authority despite never having been close to the woman.

With a quick look to Arden, who was motioning for the others to join him, the sky being the least safe place they could be, she steeled herself.

"Alright Toothless, that things got wings. Let's see if it can use them." He gave a roar of agreement sucking in before releasing a blast of flame, crashing into the side of the dragon as they circled it giving the creature a wide berth to avoid its snapping teeth.

It crashed to the side, mountain crumbling down over it as it extended its wings, stone falling from them as they moved for the first time in however long.

"It definitely has the wings for it." With a slight change in position Toothless shot into the sky, flipping back over before flying at the dragon, shooting off once more before flipping around and taunting it into a chase. At first the dragon tried to shift its humungous body to run for him but the Night Fury was too spritely, his compact size making him easily missed.

The dragon was forced to beat its wings, trying to will itself from the ground. As its feet slowly lifted Sarah was briefly reminded of a bee. it shouldn't have been possible for it to fly, yet here it was, hovering as its wings tried to re-find their strength and their understanding of flight. Something that Sarah was beginning to hope it wouldn't.

"Okay, bud, we're going to have to lure it high, and I mean high. So high that it falls and not even that can survive." The dragon nodded, preparing itself to shoot up, feeling the dragon's anger reach incomprehensible levels.

Finally the beast found its wings and flew at them, mouth open wide, having every intention of swallowing them whole. Ready for the attack Toothless rocketed into the sky, higher than the tip of the crumpled mountain and stared down at it.

"Toothless, shoot it." Sarah commanded, he complied, spitting out his fire and puncturing a hole in the thin stretched skin of the dragon's outer wing.

With a roar it shot back, the Night Fury spitting and weaving to avoid the stream.

"We need to hide in the clouds!" She had to scream to be heard over the crackling roar of the fire just inches from her. Her hair singing as it was whipped by the wind into the embers.

He seemed to nod, shooting one final burst of fire before launching with a speed only a Night Fury could have and being swallowed up by the first cloud they reached.

**Thanks to everyone who wished me well, I had to go to the hospital for a few days but I'm fine now. please read review. **

60. Chapter 60

They hunkered down in the cloud, the dampness not even registering on her already soaked body.

"Sat perfectly still then shoot it when it comes into view," she whispered into his ear, the dragon giving a small huff in confirmation.

The large queen bee was down there, eyes scanning anything and everything for movement. She knew they were up there but couldn't pin point where. Throwing caution to the wind it breathed a pillar of fire, shaking its head as the flamethrower erupted and seared through the clouds turning them a strange colour as water evaporated.

Toothless threw himself backwards as fire burst through in front of him, he whipped his tail around, sending himself into a spin away shooting three consecutive shots at the dragon, luring it up into the clouds before he threw himself up to one of the higher ones.

Sarah clung onto him, letting him dictate what happened, sending he knew what he was doing. She heard the cry of anger from the dragon behind them, could feel its hot breath on the back of her throat singeing the tiny hairs there.

Toothless dipped out and around just in time to miss the next spout of fire, staying just one step ahead of the dragon, barely missing the shots of fire it chased them with.

While he dodged she tried to think of anything that could help them, that could possibly win the fight for them.

The dragon was huge, fast and powerful, surely it had a weak point. It had to. It needed to. Because she could feel this battle dragging out, and in a game of endurance it would probably win. Toothless was nimble and small but he was handicapped and one hit to his tail and he was out for good.

As though sensing her doubt in him he tensed and flew impossibly faster, bursting out the top of the clouds and beyond the reach of the fire, turning and shooting down the centre of the funnel. The blue fire split through the orange fire, spreading it out and dispersing it with ease. The cloud seemed to part with the fire revealing the dragon far below.

Its mouth was gaping screaming silently as it sucked gas into its throat.

A thought twigged in Sarah's mind.

"That's it, Toothless. That thing is more than armoured on the outside, but I'll bet its insides are as defenceless as every other animal on this planet." He understood her completely, shifting his body 'til they were in a perfect nosedive. "Wait for my mark okay?"

He nodded, starting his dive with Sarah glued to his back, hunkered down with her eyes focused completely on the dragon's mouth. Green

gas was filtering up through its throat as it prepared for one final sharp blast of fire.

"Wait for it, wait for it." She muttered it like a mantra, more for herself than Toothless. They were quickly gaining on the dragon, close enough to see every individual scale across its face. She could almost smell the gas, her stomach churning with each passing second. "Now Toothless!"

He reacted as soon as the words left her mouth, firing off a shot straight into the dragon's mouth. The gas erupting in its throat and exploding like a bomb.

Toothless dived to the side, fire bursting from the dragon in streams which he tried to dodge, embers landing on Sarah's arm and burning slightly.

The heat coming from the dragon was almost painful it was so hot, and the roar the creature was releasing in its own pain was deafening.

Toothless weaved and dodged all the fire coming at them, his tail catching a few singes from embers licking at it as they span.

The humungous dragon tried to fire another shot at them, but the gas in its throat was still surrounded by embers, the gas exploding once more in a violent explosion of flame.

She couldn't stop the gasp from leaving her throat as embers landed on her face and arms. As much as she tried to keep herself silent and focused on what was happening the small singes of pain were enough to pull a gasp from her lips.

Toothless seemed to sense her pain and quickened his flight downwards, the dragon trying to turn after him but their movements were slow and pained.

Stray slivers of fire caught onto Toothless' tail, the rushing wind not extinguishing it as the fire caught and engulfed the fabric. She forced herself to ignore the fire behind them though her heart was pounding knowing it was creeping up the homemade fin.

Taking steady breaths she angled Toothless into the dragon's path his tail waving around in the wind as he tried to blow it out before it seriously damaged his fin.

"Alright Toothless, one final shot and she'll be down for the count. I can feel it. Like yourself up and fire." He sucked in gas as he centred himself, waiting for the dragon to try once more to shoot them down.

The ground was gaining on them quickly, just a few more seconds and it'd be too late to get away.

"Wait for it, wait for it," gas was gathering in the dragon's mouth, the creature clearly too dazed from the other attacks to register how dangerous it was. "Now!" He fired before diving away, the blue fire striking the gas and exploding, the dragon shooting past them and smashing into the ground below.

A loud bang shook the air and nearly sent the two spinning, Toothless struggling to stay straight as he beat his wings, the fire on his tail burning close to the end. The fin was practically useless, the moment it finally gave causing the dragon to jerk and throw Sarah backwards into the explosion beneath as the dragon engulfed itself in flame.

A silent cry left both her and Toothless, the Night Fury desperately clawing at the air as he tried to flip himself around and chase after. She fell helplessly, arms flailing as wind and heat started to surround her. Toothless' body starting to vanish as the fire from below sucked her in.

Before everything went blank she could just hear Toothless' cry of desperation as he tried desperately to grab her.

Stoick burst through the crows surrounding the fallen dragon, he lay there, head to the ground and his body wrapped up tightly like a sleeping bat. Cautiously he moved forwards, eyeing the dragon warily, his eyes scanned the area for his daughter, his chest tightening as every second passed.

"Sarah?" He asked, not daring to raise his voice too much, his heart was pounding but he was fearful that if he spoke too loudly he'd shatter the calm and the dragon would snap.

It looked dead, only the flaring of his nostrils saying otherwise. He held still, willing himself to move forwards. The creature was terrifying he couldn't deny.

Stoick forced his eyes away from the dragon and scanned the area around, looking for any sign of his daughter, even a single hair.

There was nothing.

Falling to his knees tears gathered in his eyes as he scraped the ground his heart clenching tightly in his chest, on the verge of breaking.

"No, please no. Sarah, I'm so so sorry."

A tear broke free and the flood gates opened, tears running down his face and dropping to the floor as his heart shattered.

Toothless watched silently, taking in his every movement and reaction, his eyes widened at the sight of tears and he loosened his tight cocoon. Making a small sound in his throat he grabbed Stoick's attention. The man stared at him through his teary eyes, rubbing at them with the back of his hand as the dragon uncurled his wings and revealed an unconscious Sarah.

Stoick ran forwards, his fear towards the dragon completely forgotten as he grabbed his daughter, pressing his ear to her chest and searching for a heartbeat.

"She's alive! She's alive!" An audible sigh of relief left the people gathered around them, Arden resisting the urge to run forwards and grab her into a hug.

Stoick stared at Toothless as he stared back, a brief moment of understanding passed through them.

"Thank you for saving my daughter." Reaching forwards he patted his scaled head Toothless letting out a quiet purr at the action. "Men, go salvage whatever you can of the ships, we're going back to the village and leaving this godforsaken island for good. And you, hunters, I doubt we'll be needing you anymore."

The hunters didn't react to Stoick's words, one pulling out a phone and calling somebody in a hushed voice.

Stoick glanced at Toothless, wondering how he was supposed to get the dragon back to the village, he could see its tail was useless and leaving him behind just wasn't an option anymore.

Arden stepped forwards and Toothless stood, stretching out his back with only a slight wince.

"You okay Toothless? Come on, let's get you back to Berk where I can fix you up." The dragon walked over and nosed him affectionately, his eyes fluttering shut as he purred. "Stoick, I'll handle the dragons, you just take care of Sarah, I think she's going to need a doctor quickly."

"Aye, have as many of the men as you want to help you." He carefully walked off, making sure he supported Sarah completely and glaring at anyone who came in five feet of her.

The other dragons and teens came over silent and waiting for their instructions. Even the twins who were usually rambunctious or arguing were sombre only the occasional cough breaking their silence.

"How many people do you think the dragons can carry?"

"Two or three probably. Ruff and Tuff's could probably hold a few more."

"Get as many as you can and head back, Stormfly can help me get Toothless back to Berk." They nodded and ran off with their dragons, leaving Arden Stormfly and Toothless alone. "Don't worry guys, she'll be fine. Berk's got some good doctors."

Both dragons nosed him and he settled his hands on their heads. He tried to hold his own worry down but his heart was practically hammering out of his chest.

"Come on, we don't have time to wait around."

****please read review****

61. Chapter 61

1 week later

The sun over Berk was shining blindingly through the open window of her bedroom window. With a groan of discomfort she cracked her eyes open, sluggishly flopping her arm over her face.

Scrabbling could be heard in the room but she was far too tired to look, but a burst of pain running through her lower half forced her up soon after. Hand flopping onto the head of a dragon she opened her eyes to see Toothless his wide jade ever staring into her own.

"Hey buddy," she croaked, her throat dry and tight but he didn't seem to care licking her face and leaving no inch dry. Half-heartedly she tried to push him back, laughing and giggling the whole time.

Eventually he backed off and took to climbing the room in his excitement, his large body squeezing through the exposed beam scraping off varnish as he went.

"Toothless, Toothless get down what if someone sees you?" A spark of worry ran through her at the thought of her dad seeing her, throwing the covers back she went to jump out of bed, stopping at the sight of her leg.

A thick bandage coiled up her leg, her foot looking slightly shorter than she remembered. As though on cue pain ran through her lower half, her leg aching and stinging. A hiss of pain left her lips before she could stop it, Toothless popping up at her side instantly letting her rest her weight on his head.

Slowly he helped her hobble to a pair of crutches stacked in the corner of her room, already set to her height.

"Thanks buddy, I got this." Removing her hands from him she propped herself up and balanced carefully, doing a few test steps before turning her attention back to the stairs. How the hell was she supposed to get down these?

She moved to make a cautious step down when the ground was swept from under her feet a gasp trying to escape her as she was ran down the stairs on a dragon's back.

Barely managing to keep hold of the crutches and the dragon they skidded to a halt at the door Toothless lowering himself to the ground for her to get off.

She did so, somehow managing to keep her balance. The noise must have alerted someone outside as the door swung open and there stood a grinning Stoick, his lips stretched wide and his hands settled on his hips.

"Well, look who's finally awoken sleeping beauty. How ya feelin'?"

"Not too bad I guess," She gave a small shrug, shifting her body so Toothless could bound out.

"He hasn't left your side."

"How long was I out?"

"A week, came home from the hospital yesterday. They uh, tried to save your leg as best they could."

"Yeah, I figured it would be bad when I fell."

"The dragon, Toothy-"

"Toothless"

"Toothless, he saved you." Sarah's eyes fell to the dragon and he stared back at her, she knew Toothless cared for her, but knowing he'd risk his own life for her. It meant a lot. "A lot's changed since then." He coughed before he spoke, bringing their attention back to him.

"Changed how?"

"See for yourself," stepping aside he helped her move forwards her eyes widening as they landed on the scene before her.

Dragons, dozens of them, were lounging about, sleeping on roofs, flying down the roads, eating fish from large troughs. And the villagers of Berk weren't bothered, some even tossing fish to the lazy dragons sunbathing,

"Arden, he uh, did some explaining. Lecturing really, about the dragons. And well, they've moved in."

As though sensing he was being spoken about he turned from a dragon he was scratching, his face lighting up when it landed on Sarah. The dragon nudged him, urging him forwards, he didn't need more prodding and broke into a run quickly bounding up the hill and stopping before her and Stoick.

"Hey, you're up, that's a relief."

"Yeah, I see you've been busy." She gestured towards the village, watching as his chest puffed out in pride.

"Yeah well, I didn't want you to wake up to the same ol' Berk." He looked out at everything, "I wanted to give you something pleasant to wake up to."

His cheeks were tinged pink, as were hers and Stoick irritably cleared his throat before any more could be said.

Toothless burst from the house, apparently bored of standing still and not being fussed by his other friend. Out of the cramped house Sarah could finally get a proper look at his tail, the sole fin looking lonely.

"His prosthetic was burned off in the fight. Gobber and I have been working on a replacement. We finished it last night but I figured you'd want to do the honours." He left funning to the blacksmith's shop and coming out seconds later holding the bright red fin above his head. Toothless' face lit up he bound down to him wiggling like an excited cat.

Stoick helped Sarah down the hill as Arden attached the fin to him, the dragon barely managing to keep still for it to be attached in his excitement.

"I know I said you'll do the honours but because of your leg, do you mind if I sit upfront for a change and control him?" He was blushing

as he spoke and she bit her own lip nervously, stepping forwards and grabbing him by the collar with one hand, pulling him close and pecking their lips together. Both faces turned instantly pink as they separated slowly, Arden catching Stoick's glaring eyes.

"I'd love it."

Toothless hunkered down as she carefully got on his back with Arden controlling his tail. Before they set off she wrapped her arms around his chest and held herself closer to him resting her head on his shoulder. Completely oblivious to Stoick's glare.

"Ready?"

"Of course,"

With a flick of his heel the tail sprung open and launched them into the air, other dragons flying afterwards trying to keep up with the Night Fury.

Sarah couldn't help the wide smile that stretched across her face, Berk as she had known it was gone. And in its place was the new Berk. One she knew would be around for much longer, and she couldn't wait to see it happen.

Pulling herself closer to Arden she tucked her head into his neck and sighed deeply. She could honestly say she was happy. And no one was going to take this from her. As Toothless dipped to the sea she swore it to herself. She wasn't going to let this new Berk go without a fight.

This is the final chapter, thank you everyone who's read and reviewed this fic. I really appreciate it, I really enjoyed writing it and I hope you all enjoyed reading just as much.

End
file.